



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

History  
of the  
Anglo-Saxons





600081929Z



[REDACTED]

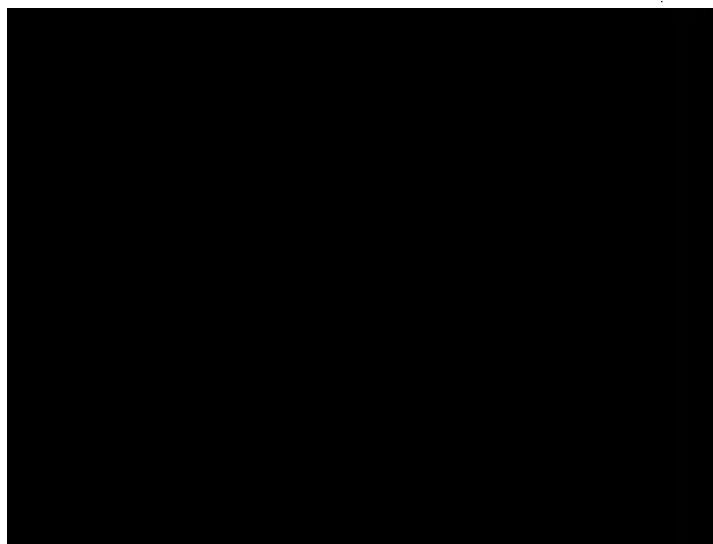
[REDACTED]





600081929Z







1

*History of the Anglo-Saxons.*

.







Intersecting Norman Arches, Lincoln.



HISTORY  
OF  
THE ANGLO-SAXONS.

By FRANCIS PALGRAVE,

F.R.S., F.S.A.

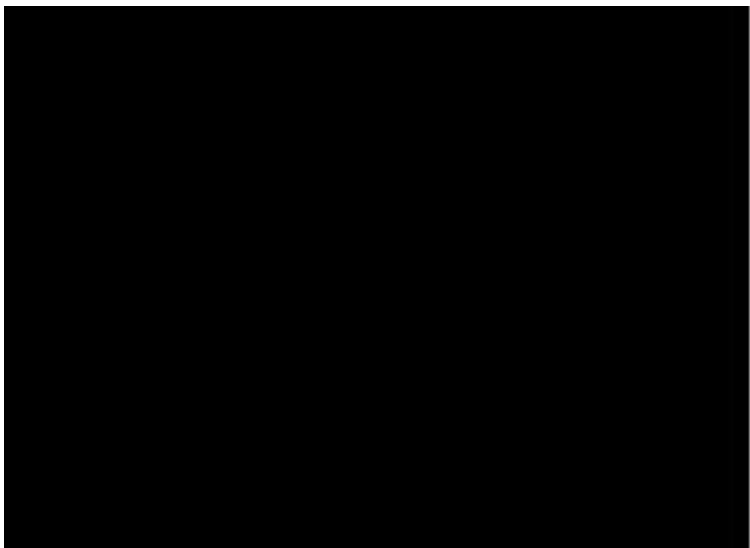
A New Edition, Illustrated.



The Horn of Ulphus.

LONDON: WILLIAM TEGG.  
1867.

226. k. 53.





RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED,

BY THE AUTHOR,

TO

**Miss Anna Gurney,**

**NORTH-REPPS, NORFOLK.**

[REDACTED]

[REDACTED]



## PREFACE.

---

MY DEAR FRIEND,

THE volume which I have now the satisfaction of transmitting and inscribing to you, as a sincere, though very inadequate, testimony of my respect and regard, has been much altered in plan, since I was employed upon it at your residence.

The chapters which you then perused, were intended to constitute a selection of incidents and passages from English history, in professed imitation of the admirable model furnished by the "Tales of a Grandfather." As I proceeded, however, I became more and more inclined to complete the annals of our country. One chasm in the series was filled up after another, and the narrative, having been composed, de-composed, and re-composed, assumed the shape in which it is now offered to you. That a work, originating under such circumstances, should present some variations of style and manner in its different parts may, perhaps, be anticipated by the reader, and

pardoned by the critic; nor am I, on the whole, inclined to regret them. All the merit of a volume of such humble pretensions as the present, consists in its utility. It is my business to teach, and not to seek applause; and, considering that the "*History of the Anglo-Saxons*" may possibly fall into the hands of individuals of very unequal ages, I am not entirely sure whether even a greater inequality of treatment might not tend to render the lessons more generally intelligible and useful.

There are matters relating to ancient times, which, at least as far as my ability extends, cannot be distinctly brought before the consideration of a reader who is strange to the subject, without employing the

—delineations of character,— all come under this category ; and, therefore, in a work which can only be considered as elementary, or as a help to those who have not the leisure or the inclination to consult multifarious and diversified sources of information, the irregular contexture of the parts may, perhaps, contribute to adapt the whole of the purposes for which it is designed.

“Books,” says Dr. Johnson, in the well-chosen quotation by which Mr. Murray recommends me to his customers, “that you may carry to the fire, and hold readily in your hand, are the most useful after all. A man will often look at them, and be tempted to go on, when he would have been frightened at books of a larger size or a more erudite appearance.” Let me hope, then, that occasionally, whilst the younger branches find some amusement in the tales and adventures here brought together, some of the older folks may not be unwilling to take this little summary in hand, as a temporary substitute for the unmanageable folios produced by the unwearied industry of Saville, and Twysden, and Warton, and Wilkins, and which have so often descended to the floor from the desks, on which they surround me.

Upon the original sources whence the volume is derived, I will not at present enlarge ; it being my intention, on a future occasion, to discuss the origin,



character, and merits of our ancient chronicles. It is sufficient to observe, that the authorities for all the more material facts are given in the larger work, in which I have attempted to deduce the "rise and progress of the English Commonwealth" by and through the history of the legal and political institutions of our country. You will, perhaps, miss some of the transactions noticed in that invaluable record, the Saxon Chronicle, which you first rendered in our vernacular language,—and you will see that I have not attempted to enter into any details of the earlier succession of those monarchies which finally acknowledged the supremacy of the sons of Cerdic. Yet I hope that no fact which can fairly be considered as

*l'Etablissement de la Monarchie Françoise dans les Gaules,*" one of the most valuable historical essays in the whole compass of literature.

Our contemporaries have done much for the elucidation of this question. Savigny has demonstrated the continuance of Roman policy and a Roman people far into the middle ages. The rise of the royal prerogatives of the English kings out of the principles of the Roman jurisprudence, has been traced, with profound learning, by Mr. Allen. And, after having long investigated the subject, I may, perhaps, be allowed to add my opinion, that there is no possible mode of exhibiting the states of western Christendom in their true aspect, unless we consider them as arising out of the dominion of the Cæsars.

In our own English history, it is also equally important that the inquirer should keep in mind the distinct and separate political existence of the different Anglo-Saxon states, after they became subject to the supremacy of one monarch. No opinion is more prevalent, and at the same time more entirely unfounded, than that which presupposes that the conquests of Egbert, so erroneously styled the "first sole monarch" of the English, incorporated the various states and communities of the Anglo-Saxon empire. This union was effected by very slow degrees. Long after the conquest, we may discern

vestiges of the earlier state of government. Perhaps it was not until the reign of Edward I. that England became one commonwealth, under one king; and, from the federative spirit of our ancient constitution, some of its best and most important characteristics were derived.

I shall not be obstinate in defending the few etymologies which I have introduced. Let them be taken as helps to the memory—such I have found them—and as such they may be useful. Most of the disputes arising out of the origin of words, are literally *verbal* disputes; and, taken in connexion with history, the material points are, not so much the remote origin of a term, as the immediate source

*WÆD-ian*, we find the same verb, differing only by the termination of the infinitive ; or, to speak more correctly, by the verb abbreviated and suffixed, which has converted the noun, or radical syllable, into a word of action. In the *Romance* dialects of the Latin, the transitions from "*Vadiare*" into "*Guadiare*," "*Guatgiare*," "*Guagiare*," "*Gaggier*," "*Gageure*,"—only require to be pointed out as the intermediate shades of pronunciation and inflection. From "*Gageure*" our "*Wager*" is formed : this being the shape in which we derived the term for *pledge* from our Norman conquerors. But "*Bet*" is our own, and of direct Teutonic or Anglo-Saxon lineage. "*Wæd*" or "*Wed*," in our ancient speech, is a thing pledged—the root of the verb,—and "*Bad*," whence our "*Bet*," *i. e.*, a *pledge*, or engagement that you will pay the sum you venture,—is merely a dialectical inflection of the root, used anciently in Damnonia, occurring in the compact between the English and Britons of the west. "*Gif bad genumen sy on monnes orfe.*" "*If a pledge be taken from a man's chattels.*" In the Danish and Belgic tongue the word is almost as near to our common term, being "*Ved*" and "*Wette* ;" and you will recollect the many derivatives, such as "*Wadset*," "*Wedding*," &c., which are all grounded upon the primary idea of "*Pledge*" or compact.

As a further help to the memory, I have also endeavoured to connect the facts of our annals with British topography, and for that purpose I have sometimes deviated a little from my direct path. Amongst the many causes which have contributed to render our Anglo-Saxon history unpopular, is the extreme difficulty of forming any definite idea of the obscure and shadowy personages who figure in its pages. But by associating their names with familiar localities, we obtain a better acquaintance with them. I am sure that Sir Walter Scott's verses, describing "King Ida's castle huge and square," have, in the present generation, done more for that same King Ida, than Nennius and Malmesbury, and all the

“ King of the English—Basileus of Britain—Emperor and ruler of all the sovereigns and nations who inhabit the Island—Lord Paramount of the sceptres of the Cumbrians, the Scots, and the Britons,”—and suppose yourself to be Haco, a Norwegian stranger, introduced by an Anglo-Saxon friend, and listening to his explanations of the assembly which you behold :—

“ Those persons who are sitting and standing nighest to the king, are his chief officers of state. That tall, thin, rough-looking man is Algar, the *Stallere*, whom the Franks call the Constable of the Host ; and great as he is, I assure you, Haco, that not one of the king's horses is sent to grass without his special order. The portly nobleman, with the huge knife and wooden trencher, is Æthelmar, the *Dish Thane*—he carves the meat for royalty. Hugoline, that cautious, sly-looking clerk, is the *Bower Thane*, or Chamberlain ; he keeps the key of the king's *Hoard*. You would be astonished to see the heaps of treasure in the low, vaulted chamber ; and yet there is not quite so much in the Hoard as there used to be. After we had driven out your countrymen, the usurper Hardacnute, and restored our darling, King Edward, the true and legitimate heir of the right royal line of Cerdic, the *Huscarls* of the Palace still continued to collect the *Danegeld* as rigidly as before ; and many

an honest husbandman had his house and land sold over his head, within three days after the tax became due, to pay the arrears which he had incurred. Not that our worthy king was ever a penny the better for the Danegeld. Good man, he never troubles himself about money, he leaves all that charge to Hugoline. If you were to empty King Edward's purse before his face he would not bid you stay your hand ; he would only say—Take care, friend, that you are not found out by Hugoline. Though the king was so little benefited by the taxes, I suppose that others fared better ; and the Danegeld was levied as rigidly as ever—until one day, the king rose from his bed, asked Hugoline for the key, and went alone into the Hoard.



the head of the bench, is Reinbaldus, the Chancellor. These venerable persons have been gradually gaining more and more influence in the Witenagemot ; though anciently they were only appointed for the purpose of celebrating mass and singing in the king's chapel ; and Reinbaldus, the Chancellor, holds merely the place of the Arch-Chaplain of the French kings ; he is a kind of dean, the king's confessor, who takes care of the king's conscience, and imposes very hard penances upon him when he has sinned. But for some time past, our kings have been accustomed to turn their chaplains really to good use, by employing them constantly as their writing clerks. In this capacity the most important matters of public business must pass through their hands. Hence they have much power, and a power which was totally unknown to our ancestors ; and in this innovating age, their influence has been greatly increased by a fashion which our good King Edward has brought from France. He has caused a great seal to be made, on which you may see his effigy, in his imperial robes ; and to all the *writs* or written letters, which issue in his name, an impression from that seal is appended.

"It is by such writs that our king signifies his commands. If a question of great importance is to be decided before the thanes of the shire, in a manner

out of the ordinary course, it is heard before certain clerks, and others, named by the king's writ. If a clerk is promoted to a bishopric, he must have a writ before he can be placed in his chair or throne. If you wish to obtain the king's protection, or his 'peace,' you had best obtain a writ, by which this favour is testified. For this purpose you must apply to the clerks of the chapel. Whether issued by the king's special direction or not, the writ is often a long time in making its appearance. And suitors find that a golden cup placed in the king's wardrobe, or a bay stallion sent to the royal stable, has a great effect in driving the chaplain's quill. At present, great part of our law business is cheaply, expe-

his clerks, and of those whom the king may depute to administer justice in his name.

“So much for those who are about the king. With respect to the Witenagemot itself, you will observe, that it is divided into three orders or estates. The mitres and cowls of those who are nearest to the king, sufficiently point out that the ‘lewed-folk,’ or laymen, have yielded the place of honour to the clergy. The prelates, howevers, have a double right to be present, not only as teachers of the people, but as landlords. Our government, Haco, is founded upon the principle, that, in all matters concerning the commonweal, the king ought to take the advice and opinion of the principal owners of the soil. We allow only of two qualifications for a seat in this assembly: either such a station as, in itself, is an undeniable voucher for the character and respectability of the individual; or such a share of real property as may be considered a permanent security for his good behaviour. Noble birth alone, much as we respect ancient lineage, tells for nothing whatever in our English Witenagemot, if unaccompanied by the qualification of *clerkship* or property.

“You see that near the bishops and abbots are many clergy of inferior degree. Every bishop brings with him a certain number of priests elected or selected from his own diocese. Learned clerks have

told me, that this is in compliance with the canon of an ancient council; and they believe that this deputation from the dioceses has in some measure contributed to shape our temporal legislature. Others think that some such councils as the Witenagemots were held even when the Romans governed this island, and built those stately towns and palaces, of which you have seen the ruins. If Bishop Aldhelm, he who was so well read in the old Roman law books, still lived, perhaps he could give you further explanations. But the history of the past is of less consequence than the business of the present day.

“The dignified clergy, as they sit in a double right, act to a certain degree in a double capacity. In all

rulers, who are bound by homage to the Crown. That vacant seat belongs to Malcolm, King of the Scots, or, as some begin to call him, the King of Scotland. The wicked usurper Macbeth had possession of his throne, and of those dominions in Lothian, in respect of which the homage of the King of Scots is more particularly rendered. Malcolm, the vassal of our King Edward, had a full right to claim the aid of his superior, and it was granted right nobly. By King Edward's command, the stout Earl Siward marched all his forces across the Tweed, with a mighty army. Macbeth had called the Northmen—your countrymen, Haco—to his aid; but his resistance was hopeless: he was expelled, and Malcolm, as King Edward had commanded, was restored to the inheritance of his ancestors. Malcolm ought to be here in person. When he comes up, he is escorted from shire to shire, by earls and bishops; and, at convenient distances, mansions and townships have been assigned to him, where he and his attendants may abide and rest. Yet, with all these aids, the journey is most tedious, and not unfrequently accompanied by danger; besides which, it is not altogether safe for Malcolm to leave the wild Scots, his turbulent subjects, uncontrolled during the very long space of time—seldom so little as half-a-year, which he must pass upon the road; Watling-street

is much out of repair; it has not had a stone laid upon it since the arrival of Hengist and Horsa; and the top of the Roman fosse-way is worse than the bottom of a ditch; and, therefore, the attendance of the King of Scots is generally excused.

“The King of Cumbria, and the kings or ‘under kings’ of the Welsh, sit nigh unto the King of Scots. The two latter, Blethyn and Rhivallon, have just now sworn oaths to King Edward, and given hostages, that they will be faithful to him in all things, and everywhere ready to serve him by sea and land, and that they will perform all such obligations, in respect of the country, as ever their predecessors had done to his predecessors. But the Welsh are an unfaithful nation, untrue even to themselves. Crif

And in the very register-book of their cathedral of Landaff, have they recorded how Howell the Good submitted to the judgment of the Witenagemot held by Edward the Elder, the son of the Great Alfred, and was compelled to restore to Morgan-hên and his son Owen, the rich commots or lordships of Ystradwy and Ewyas, which he had appropriated to himself, contrary to conscience and equity.

“On the same bench with these vassal kings, sit the great earls of the realm, distinguished by the golden collars and caps of maintenance which they wear. These marks of honour have, however, long belonged to them ; for it is thus that the effigy of the venerable Aylwine of East Anglia is adorned, as you may see upon his tomb at Ramsey minster. He who looks so fell and grim is Siward, the son of Beorn, Earl of Northumbria. The good people in the north, who give credit to all the sagas, or lying tales of your scalds, actually believe that Siward’s grandfather was a bear in the forests of Norway, and that when his father, Beorn, lifted up his uncombed locks, the two pointed shaggy ears, which he had inherited from the bear, testified the nature of his sire. Siward himself takes no pains to contradict this story. On the contrary, I rather think that he considers it as a piece of good policy to encourage any report which may add to the terror inspired by his name. He has

declared that he will never die, except in full armour.

“Earl Leofric of Mercia, as you see, keeps at a distance from Earl Godwin of Wessex. These noblemen are always opposed to each other; and I dread the consequences of such dissensions. Some earls rule only single shires. They ought more properly to be called aldermen;—but our old English name is becoming unfashionable; it has given way to the Danish appellation introduced under Canute, who, as I need scarcely tell you, Haco, really and truly conquered England.

“The earls thus constitute the second order of the witan. The third and lowest order in rank, yet by



if you asked him what goes for law on the other side of the Avon.

“ When the Witenagemot was last held at Oxford, I recollect conversing with some thanes who came from the Danish burghs, and here also may be others from the great cities of this kingdom. I understand that, in many of our ancient cities, the aldermen, lawmen, and other magistrates, exercise their authority by virtue of the lands to which their offices are annexed. I dare say they are all in the house, but the place is so dark, that at this distance I really cannot distinguish their faces. As to that mixed multitude by whom the farther part of the hall is crowded, and who can be just seen behind the thanes, they consist, as far as I can judge, of the class of folks who come together in vast crowds at the meetings of our hundreds and our shires. It is usual, in these assemblies, that four good men and the reeve should appear from every upland or rural township ; their office being to give testimony, and to perform other acts relating to the administration of justice, and also to receive the commands of their superiors. In the Witenagemot, I believe, they are seldom or never called upon to act ; but they attend from ancient custom, deduced, perhaps, from the old time, when our kings were merely the aldermen of a single shire, and when the court in which they presided was merely the moot of their

own little territory. And, whatever the rights or privileges of these churls might be in days of yore, I am tolerably sure of what they are not in these modern times. They have no weight or influence in the enactment of any law: voices, indeed, they may have, but only for the purpose of crying out—‘Yea, yea!’—when the doom enacted by advice of the witan is proclaimed.

“Some of our old men have thought that this kind of assent is a recollection of the customs which prevailed amongst our forefathers, the old Saxons, before they quitted the forests of Germany, when, as it is said, the *leod*, or people at large, gave their consent to the laws which the ealdormen and priests had

were, one day or another, to pluck up heart of grace, and cry out—'No, no!'—instead of affirming, as in duty bound, what their betters have thought best for them.

"Yet you must not suppose that these rustics are excluded by any perpetual bar. It was whilome the old English law, that if a merchant crossed the sea three times at his own risk, he obtained the rank of thane. Five hydes of land possessed by the churl for three generations, if held by him, his son, and his son's son, placed the family in the class of those who were gentle by birth and blood; 'Sithcundmen,' as such families were then called, before King Alfred's day; and though such laws are connected with usages and doctrines which have become obsolete, still we retain all the spirit of our ancient lessons of freedom; and, if qualified by station and property, there is no man between the channel and the water of Scotland, who may not acquire a share in the government of our empire.

"Haco, you well know how we call this assembly? A '*Micel getheaht*,' or great thought—a *Witena-gemot*, or 'Meeting of the Wise'—and at present it well deserves its name. Our *redes-men* or counsellors, the members of the legislature, ponder much before they come together, say little, and write less. All the dooms or statutes which have been

enacted since the days of King Ethelbert, would not fill four-and-twenty leaves of that brass-bound missal, which Thorold, the acolyte, has dropped amongst the rushes on the floor. Hence, our common people know the laws and respect them; and, what is of much greater importance, they respect the law-makers—Long may they continue to deserve respect. But I am not without apprehensions for the future. We are strangely fond of novelty. Since the days of King Egbert, we have been accustomed to consider the French as the very patterns of good government and civilization. And although we have seen king after king expelled, there are numbers amongst us, including some very estimable personages, who con-

tradicting one another, and end by contradicting themselves. Constantly raising expectations which they never can fulfil; each party systematically decrying the acts of the other; the soc-men and churls, who compose the great body of the people, will at last fancy that the witan are no wiser than the rest of the community. They will suppose that the art of government requires neither skill nor practice; that it is accessible to the meanest capacity; that it requires nothing but Parlement, or great talk; and, leaving their ploughs and their harrows, armed with their flails and pitchforks, they will rush into the hall. They will demolish the throne, and, seizing the sceptre and the sword, they will involve the whole state in unutterable confusion and misery."

Allowing for a few anachronisms in the grouping of the individual characters, which do not alter the general truth of the picture, such was the aspect of the "Witenagemot," as far as it can be gathered from the documents which now exist; and, if you will take the trouble to consult the proofs appended to my larger work, you will find that I have mentioned no person by name who did not fill the station which I have assigned to him. Considered as a political congress, we may fairly say that the *micel getheah*t represented the whole realm. And whenever the assent of the witan was required by the monarch to

any measure of importance, the question was discussed in such an assembly. The extent of the prerogative of the king is extremely undefined ; but, from the whole tenor of Anglo-Saxon history, we are enabled to affirm, that every affair and matter which concerned the empire, received the sanction of these virtual representatives of the community.

As a legislative body, the authority of the Witenagemot appears to have been limited by the privileges of the different states composing the Anglo-Saxon empire ; and which dominions, as I have often remarked, had never amalgamated into one kingdom. Kent, for instance, under the victorious Athelstane, had lost all the appearance of an independent state.

They then state the several articles or chapters of the statute, being ten in number, *seriatim*, and signify the manner in which they have received and modified the same. Grateful for the legislation thus bestowed upon them, the Kentishmen speak with thankfulness and humility; yet the form of the proceeding implies that their assent, so asked, might have been refused. In proportion as the sovereign gained in prerogative, the powers of the Witenagemot of Wessex, the predominant kingdom, would gradually gain strength also. The minor states annexed to Wessex would tacitly submit to be bound by its legislation; and, from the reign of Edgar, the lesser authorities seem, in most cases, to have been merged in the three leading states or territories of Wessex, Mercia, and Danelagh. Mercia clearly maintained its independence; Northumbria equally so. East Anglia seems to have been sometimes considered as annexed to Mercia, sometimes as constituting a separate state, and sometimes as classing with Danish Northumbria. The laws which Edgar enacted at the request or with the assent of the witan of Wessex were to be implicitly observed by his own immediate subjects—including the Britons who inhabited the Anglo-Saxon shires. As to the others, they were to be adopted according the model enacted by the assembly. The laws were transmitted to the earls by writ; it is most prob-

able that they were usually received without hesitation : yet there was no absolute coercive power in the crown of Wessex ; and it was not until the reign of Canute that the Mercians received King Edgar's laws.

It is not to be supposed that the relations between the subordinate states and the paramount legislature were very accurately defined ; and we may suppose, that when defined, they were not always secure from violation. The American war took place, because the Parliament of Great Britain claimed an authority which the Assembly of New England refused. Both parties appealed to the same muniments of the same constitution ; and, whilst I am now writing, the colonial parliament of Lower Canada is at issue with



Recollect, also, that, in great measure, the same theory has always been familiar to us. Under one Crown, England, Scotland, and Ireland had their respective parliaments. The Isle of Man has a distinct legislature, called the "House of Keys;" and until the Duke of Athol sold the sovereignty of the island, he and the Stanleys, his ancestors, were, to all intents and purposes, kings of Man. The Norman islands of Guernsey and Jersey have their "estates," which are quite independent of the Parliament of the United Kingdom.

The theory of the rights of England and of the dependencies of the royal crown in 1688, admitted of no doubt; but the theory was not entirely respected by practical policy. When the English parliament changed the succession of the royal authority, by expelling the Stuarts, and bringing in the Prince of Orange, they did so, not only without the consent of the Irish, but entirely against their will. As for the Isle of Man, the King who then ruled was William Stanley, who sat in parliament as Earl of Derby. He possessed full rights of sovereignty within his narrow territory; yet, when the English Parliament declared that James had abdicated the throne, and the Scottish parliament voted that he forfeited his royal dignity, neither legislature thought it necessary to obtain any ratification of their proceedings from

the Manx sovereign. And, lastly, if the Parliament of England thought fit to grant the supplies for a war against France, the minister did not think it necessary to wait for the concurrence of the bailiffs, jurats, and constables, who compose the supreme legislature of the Norman Isles.

This, then, was very nearly the state of the Anglo-Saxon dominions. And if, for England, Scotland, Ireland, Man, and the Norman Isles, you substitute Wessex, Northumbria, Mercia, East Anglia, and Kent, you will have a good idea of the general aspect of the mutual relations of the Anglo-Saxon states towards each other, and towards their common sovereign.

the least possible reason for doubt, even our senses may be deluded by our passions and feelings.

The annals of justice furnish numerous instances of these hallucinations : but one of the most striking examples occurred a few years ago at Dublin :—

A pleasure-boat, belonging to a party of noted Brunswickers, having been moored on the River Liffy, near Carlisle-bridge, some of the bystanders on the adjoining quay were extremely incensed at the standard of defiance which the vessel displayed. The vane at the mast-head, like those of the ships of the conqueror, displayed an effigy—an orange-man trampling on a green shamrock. This affront, aimed at the feelings of the multitude, was not to be borne. The Milesians attacked the hostile Saxon bark by hurling a furious volley of paving-stones, and the unlucky crew, urged by danger or by apprehension, discharged their fire-arms, and wounded some of the surrounding assemblage. A great commotion was excited, the leaders of the belligerent parties were conducted to College-street Police-office ; amongst the witnesses who were called was the tin-man who had made the vane. And this worthy tradesman gave the most candid and unequivocal testimony, in full proof of the pacific intention of the pleasure-boat, though certainly somewhat to his discredit as an artist. The unlucky cause of so

much dissension and bloodshed, the supposed orange-man trampling on the green shamrock, was in truth, a flesh-coloured Mercury springing from a blue cloud.

I will not stop to inquire whether the agitators on both sides of the question might not derive some useful instruction from this display of the effects produced by opinion ; I will only ask you to apply the lesson to history in general.

I have exerted myself to see the objects before me clearly and distinctly. I have endeavoured to place them in a proper light ; and I have approached them as nearly as I could, in order to ensure the utmost accuracy. However, when I took the pen in hand, I

observe, that I shall principally rest my claim for lenient treatment upon this simple plea, that, deceived or prejudiced as I may be—I have never thrown stones ;—and with this appeal, I submit myself to your judgment.

Yours ever faithfully,

FRANCIS PALGRAVE.

16TH MARCH, 1831.



# CONTENTS.

---

## CHAPTER I.

	PAGE.
Ancient Population of Britain—Political State of the Provinces under the Romans—Formation of the States of Modern Europe, under the Tyrants of the Lower Empire—Tyrants of Britain—Invasions of the Saxons, Scots, and Picts—Britain finally separated from the Empire . . .	1

## CHAPTER II.

Hengist and Horsa; their supposed Transactions with Vortigern—Progress of the Invaders—Conquest of Britain by the Jutes, Angles, and Saxons—Kingdoms founded by them—Kent, Sussex, Wessex, East Anglia, Essex, Deira, Bernicia, Mercia—Subjugation of the Britons . . .	27
---	----

## CHAPTER III.

Heathenism of the Anglo-Saxons—Deities worshipped by them—Origin of the Papal Authority—Pope Gregory undertakes the Conversion of Anglo-Saxon Britain—Missions of Augustine and Paulinus—Temporal effects of the Introduction of Christianity—Ethelbert of Kent and Edwin of Northumbria—Conversion of those Kings—Foundation of the Sees of Canterbury and London . . .	41
--	----

## CHAPTER IV.

Royal dignity not existing amongst the Saxons and Jutes before their arrival in Britain—Kings—Royal authority	
---	--

amongst the barbarians, how deduced from the Roman authority—Clovis—Bretwaldas or Emperors of Britain—Ella—Ceawlin—Ethelbert—Redwald—Edwin—Oswald—Oswio—Subjugation of the smaller States—Rise of the Kingdom of Mercia—Ethelbald—Offa—His Conquests of the Britons—Decline of Mercia, and rise of Wessex—Egbert—His early Adventures—Obtains the dignity of Bretwalda . . . . .

CHAPTER V.

The Danish Invasions—Facilitated by the dissensions of the Anglo-Saxon States—Begner Lodbrok and his Sons—Martyrdom of Edmund, King of the East Angles—Ethelwulf—His marriage with Judith—West Saxons rebel against him—Cedes the best part of his Kingdom to his son Ethelbald—Death of Ethelwulf—His four sons become successively Kings of Wessex—Ethelbald—Ethelbert—Ethered—Alfred . . . . .

CHAPTER VI.



## CONTENTS.

xli

—Historical Poetry of the Anglo-Saxons—Scarcity of Books—Printing—Possible Decay of Literature and Science . . . . .	PAGE. 121
--	--------------

## CHAPTER VIII.

<b>A</b> lfred's early Education—His want of proper Instructors—Great Decay of Learning in England, after the Danish Invasions—Translations of the Bible in the early part of the Middle Ages—Discouraged amongst the nations who spoke the Romance Dialects, and encouraged by those who spoke Teutonic—Ulfla—Cædmon—Alfred's Plans for the Restoration of Learning . . . . .	134
--	-----

## CHAPTER IX.

<b>W</b> orks Translated by Alfred, or under his direction—Bede, Orosius, Boethius, St. Augustine, &c.—Encourages Travelers—His Embassy to the Syrian Christians in Hindostan—Prudent management of his affairs—Alfred's Character—Its imperfections and merits—Alfred's Laws—His Principles of Legislation . . . . .	148
---	-----

## CHAPTER X.

<b>E</b> dward "the Elder"—Succession contested by Ethelwald, son of Ethelbald—Edward prevails—Ethelfleda, the "Lady of Mercia"—Mercia occupied by Edward—Submission of Northumbria and East Anglia—Danes, Scots, Britons, acknowledge Edward's Supremacy—Athelstane—His Character—His Wars against the Britons—Reduction of West Wales and of the City of Exeter—All Britain South of the Humber submits to him—Sihtric, King of Northumbria, married to Athelstane's sister—Commotions in Northumbria after the death of Sihtric—Scots and Danes unite against Athelstane—They are defeated in the great Battle of Brunnbaburgh—Athelstane's Reputation—Alliances of his Family with Foreign Princes—Elgiva married to Charles the Simple, King of France—Expulsion of the Carlovingian Dynasty by the Capets . 161	
---	--

## CHAPTER XI.

Edmund—Revolution in Northumbria, which raised Olave to the Throne—Treaty by which Britain was divided between Edmund and his Competitor—Death of Olave—Edmund reduces Northumbria—Cumbria, or Strathclyde—Retrospect of the History of the Cumbrian Britons—Donald, King of Cumbria, expelled by Edmund, and his Kingdom granted to Malcolm—Extinction of the Cumbrian Britons—Death of Edmund—Edred—Constitution of the Anglo-Saxon Empire—Revolt of Northumbria—Eric raised to the Throne—Edred reduces Northumbria, and converts the Kingdom into an Earldom . . . . .	PAGE 18
--	------------

## CHAPTER XII.

Accession of Edwy—Alteration in the aspect of Anglo-Saxon History—Dunstan, his Character and Influence—Celibacy of the Clergy—Establishment of the Benedictine Order—Dissensions between the Partisans of the Monks and the Secular or Married Clergy—Elgiva—Dunstan's Intemperate Conduct—He is banished from England—The Monks	
--	--

## CONTENTS.

xliii

<p><b>Danegeld — Ethelred marries Emma of Normandy —</b>  <b>Massacre of the Danes on St. Brice's Day—Sweyne's</b>  <b>Invasion—Ethelred abandons England to him—Death of</b>  <b>Sweyne—Restoration of Ethelred—Canute continues to</b>  <b>occupy the North—Death of Ethelred—Division of the</b>  <b>Country between Canute and Edmund Ironside—Murder</b>  <b>of the latter—Reign of Canute—Succession of Harold</b>  <b>Harefoot and Hardicanute . . . . .</b></p>	<p><small>PAGE.</small>  <b>231</b></p>
---	---

## CHAPTER XIV.

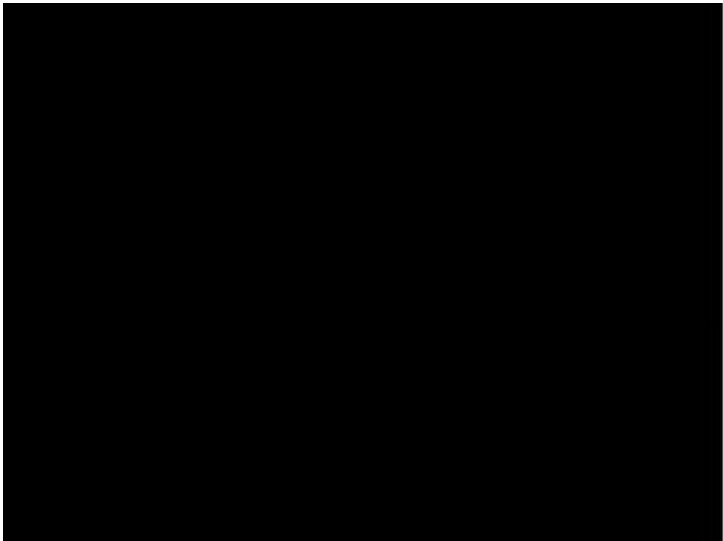
<p><b>Edward the Confessor—State of Parties—Influence of Godwin</b>  <b>and his Family—Earldoms held by them—Edward's Nor-</b>  <b>man favourites—Siward and Leofric, Earls of Northum-</b>  <b>bria and Mercia, oppose Godwin—Disturbances occasioned</b>  <b>by Eustace, Count of Boulogne—Commotions in the</b>  <b>Country—Godwin takes the Field against the King's</b>  <b>party—He and his Family are Outlawed—Visit of Wil-</b>  <b>liam of Normandy—Godwin returns, and is restored to</b>  <b>power—Death of Godwin—Questions concerning the</b>  <b>Succession—Edward the "Outlaw," son of Ironside,</b>  <b>called to England by the Confessor, and acknowledged as</b>  <b>Heir to the Crown—His untimely Death—Edward ap-</b>  <b>points William of Normandy as his Successor—Death of</b>  <b>Edward . . . . .</b></p>	<p><b>277</b></p>
---	-------------------

## CHAPTER XV.

<p><b>Harold assumes the Crown—His authority not recognised</b>  <b>throughout all the realm—William prepares to Invade</b>  <b>England—Assembly of the Norman Baronage at Lille-</b>  <b>bonne—the Pope sanctions William's enterprise—Equip-</b>  <b>ment of the Norman Fleet—Harold marries Alghitha, the</b>  <b>Sister of Edwin and Morcar—Tostig incites Harold</b>  <b>Harfager to attack Harold—the Norwegian Expedition—</b>  <b>Battle of Stamford Bridge—Harfager and Tostig slain—</b>  <b>Sailing of the Norman Fleet—Landing of the Norman</b>  <b>Army—Harold marches to attack William—Preparations</b>  <b>for the Conflict—Battle of Hastings—Tradition of the</b>  <b>escape of Harold . . . . .</b></p>	<p><b>304</b></p>
---	-------------------



•









# HISTORY

OF THE

## ANGLO-SAXONS.

---

### Chapter I.

*Ancient Population of Britain—Political State of the Provinces under the Romans—Formation of the States of Modern Europe, under the Tyrants of the Lower Empire—Tyrants of Britain—Invasions of the Saxons, Scots, and Picts—Britain finally separated from the Empire.*

ACCORDING to a very ancient tradition, which, although not possessing scriptural authority, is grounded upon scripture, the “*Cymri*,” as they are still called in their own language, are decended from Gomer, the common ancestor of all the *Celtic* tribes; Britain having fallen to their lot, when the “islands of the Gentiles” were divided amongst the “children of Japhet, every one after his tongue, after their families in their nations.”

Many nations have two or more designations; a name or names employed by foreigners, and a name which more properly belongs to them. Thus the people whom we know as *Bohemians*, call themselves *Czecki*; and the Hungarians call themselves *Magyar*. I mention these examples in order that you may understand how it happens that the “*Cymri*” are usually denominated *Britons* in our books, this latter name having been given to them

by the Romans from "*Prydain*," or *Britain*, the country in which they were found. In common English speech they are denominated *Welshmen*, a term formed from the old English or Saxon *Wilisc*, an adjective signifying any thing foreign or strange; corresponding literally, both in etymology and application, with the Latin *Peregrinus*.\* Hence *Italy* is the *Welschland* of the modern Germans, and their *Welschers* are the *Italians*:—foreigners to them, as the Britons were to the old English or Anglo-Saxon invaders. Such double or concurrent appellations are very common; and if their existence be kept in mind, you will be saved from much perplexity in your studies of history.

The people inhabiting the southern parts of the island, had, when the Romans first visited Britain, passed over more recently from *Belgic* Gaul, and differed from the Cymri in race, being of the *Teutonic* family of nations. But the lines of demarcation between the *Celts* and the *Teutons* were not then so well defined as in subsequent times. The distinctions which now characterise the progeny of Adam have been continually increasing, since the children of men were first scattered abroad on the face of the earth. And the more we ascend in history, the more apparent are the traces of that unity which subsisted, when we were all of one speech and one language, in the plain of Shinar.

Like all the other Gentiles, the Britons had abandoned the worship of the Almighty, and believed in false gods,

\* The root *Wealh*, (A. S.) or *Wale* (Germ.) denotes a *foreigner* or *stranger*; and was so applied, as far back as any of the Teutonic dialects can be traced. In the very ancient gloss upon the Salic laws, the Romans dwelling amongst the Franks are called "*Wala Leodi*," *homines Peregrini*.—*Wackter*, p. 1812. The compass of this work does not admit of any lengthened disquisitions, and I shall therefore merely notice those etymologies which, upon consideration of the best authority, appear most plausible.







**Ruins of Stonehenge.**

**Page 2.**

to whom they offered human sacrifices. They were so infatuated as to think that the favour of their idols could be obtained by slaying men and women. And this they did most cruelly ; inclosing the victims in huge figures of wicker-work, and burning the wretched sufferers alive. The Druids were the priests of the Britons, and probably the lawgivers of the people. Amongst other rites, we are told that they used to cut the misletoe, with great ceremony, on the sixth day of the moon, employing for that purpose a sickle of pure gold. The oak is said to have been venerated amongst them ; but, beyond a few particulars which have been preserved by Greek and Roman writers, we know little concerning their tenets. The doctrines of the Druids were not reduced into writing, but preserved by oral tradition ; and when the Druidical priesthood was extinguished, their lore was lost, excepting the few vestiges which may be collected from the compositions of the British Bards, and the proverbial *triads* of the Cymri.\*

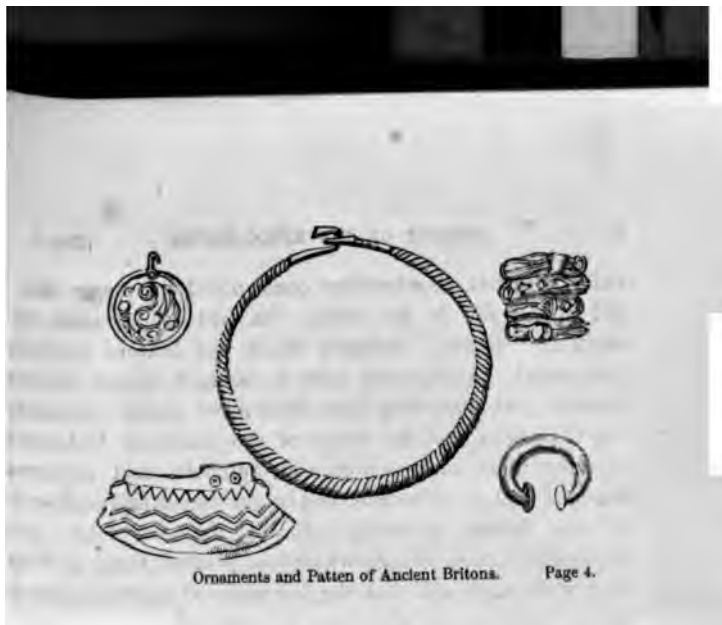
The temples in which the Britons worshipped their deities, were composed of large, rough stones, disposed in circles ; for they had not sufficient skill to execute any finished edifices. Some of these circles are yet existing ; such is Stonehenge, near Salisbury : the huge masses of rock may still be seen there, grey with age ; and the structure is yet sufficiently perfect to enable us to understand how the whole pile was anciently arranged. Stonehenge possesses a stern and savage magnificence. The masses of which it is composed are so large, that the structure seems to have been raised by more than human power. Hence, *Choir-gaur†* was fabled to have been

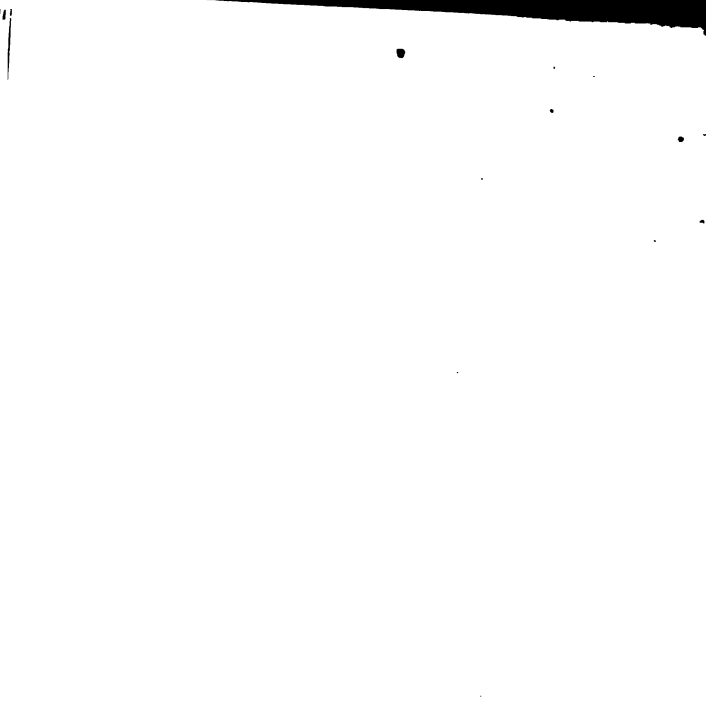
\* Some of these memorials relate to law, others to history. As their name imports, each *triad* contains three facts, precepts, or definitions.

† The "*Giant's Dance*"—the British name of Stonehenge.

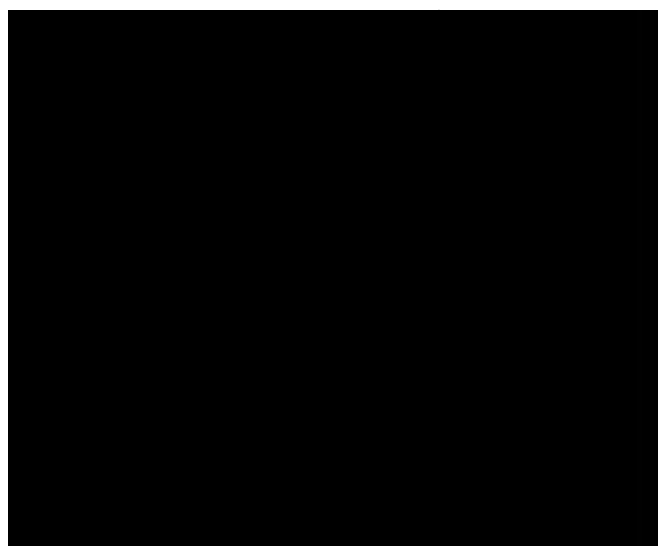
built by giants, or otherwise constructed by magic art. All around you in the plain, you will see mounds of earth or "tumuli," beneath which the Britons buried their dead. Antiquaries have sometimes opened these mounds, and there they have discovered vases, containing the ashes and the bones of the primeval Britons, together with their swords and hatchets, and arrow-heads of flint or of bronze, and beads of glass and amber; for the Britons probably believed, that the dead yet delighted in those things which had pleased them when they were alive, and that the disembodied spirit retained the inclinations and affections of mortality.

The Cymric Britons, though they lived in an island, had no boats or vessels except *coracles*, framed of slight ribs of wood covered with hides. These frail barks are still used by the Welsh fishermen on the Wye; and it may be remarked that the Celtic tribes in general have never taken to the sea, whilst the Teutons seem always to have enjoyed the dangers of the ocean. But the valour of the Britons was displayed on land: they were brave and sturdy warriors; and when they went forth to combat, they rode in chariots, with blades of scythes fixed to the axle-trees of the wheels. Engaged in battle, they urged their horses to their utmost speed, and the sharp edges of the scythes mowed down the enemy. But the prowess of the Britons was of little use or profit, for they were always quarrelling amongst themselves; and it was in consequence of these dissensions that they were at last subdued by the Romans. If the Britons had made common cause, the Romans might not have prevailed against them: but the insular tribes or nations were divided and disunited; envious of each other; and when one tribe was conquered, the others











delighted in the misfortunes of their countrymen, and then the same fate befel them in their turn. The moral deduced from the old fable of the bundle of sticks may be applied with equal truth to families or nations.

Julius Cæsar was the first civilized stranger who attacked the island ;\* but his incursions were confined to the southern coast, and the Roman dominion did not attain its full extent in Britain until Cnæus Julius Agricola† took the command.

It does not appear that the Romans ever conquered the more remote parts, beyond the Frithe of Forth and Clyde : the wall constructed by Lollius Urbicus, in the reign of Antoninus Pius, and extending from Caer-riden to Alclud, or Dumbarton, was erected for the purpose of protecting the Roman provinces against the inroads of the unsubdued tribes,—who, under the names of Caledonians and Picts,‡ inhabited the fastnesses beyond. Other fortifications of the same description, between the Solway Frith and the Tyne, constructed by Adrian and Severus, constituted a second line of defence, stretching from sea to sea.

Castles and towers,—“Burgi,” as they were called by the Romans,—ranged along these walls ; and these fortresses were constantly garrisoned by armed men. The stations were so near to each other, that if a beacon was lighted on any one of the bulwarks, the warriors who garrisoned the next station were able to see and to repeat the signal almost at the same instant ; and the next onwards did the same ; by which token they announced that some danger was impending. So that, in a very short time, all the soldiers who guarded the line of wall

\* B.C. 52, 51.

† A.D. 78.

‡ The name of “*Pict*” does not appear till that of *Caledonians* began to go out of use, but both probably denoted the same people.



could be assembled. The coast was protected with equal care against any invading enemy ; and the ancient maritime stations, Garianonum and Portus Rhotupis, may be instanced as fine specimens of Roman skill and industry. The Romans also fortified many strong cities in different parts of the island, which they surrounded by lofty ramparts. These "colonies," or "municipia," were peopled with Roman inhabitants, who came hither from Italy, accompanied by their wives and children ; and within the circuit of the fortifications, they built temples, and palaces, and baths, and many other splendid structures, living in great luxury and delight. Frequently it happens, that when workmen are employed in digging the foundations of new erections in modern towns, occupying the site of Roman cities, such as Gloucester, Cirencester, and Colchester, they find beautiful tessellated pavements, composed of coloured stones, ar-



Garsdonum (Burgh Castle, Suffolk).



The Britons, or at least those tribes who inhabited the vicinity of the Roman colonies, soon adopted and emulated the customs of their masters, for evil as well as good. They learnt to speak the Latin language, adopted Latin names, clad themselves in rich raiment, and vied with the Romans in every luxury of corrupted Rome. In the earlier stages of the Roman conquests, the native Princes were, according to the usual custom of nations calling themselves civilized, when they deal with those whom they term savages, treated with merciless severity by the conquerors, for daring to struggle against their power. Boadicea, bleeding beneath the scourge, and Caractacus, or Caradoc, driven in fetters by the scoffing lictor, are familiar examples of this unrelenting tyranny. But this harshness was not always exerted; and other British princes were allowed to retain their dominions beneath the Roman supremacy. Cogidumnus, who appears, from an inscription discovered at Chichester, to have reigned in or near Sussex, the ancient territory of the Regni, may be quoted as one of these tributary governors. In such a country, the native population, having a ruler of their own race and blood placed over them, were probably less oppressed than in those parts where they were immediately beneath the rod of the Roman masters. But in other districts, and particularly towards the eastern side of the island, it should seem as if the British nobility and aristocracy had been entirely swept away, and the land allotted out to the Roman colonists, under whose power the British cultivators of the soil passed into a state of prædial slavery or villinage.

When we speak of the "Roman empire," we are apt to consider it as a consolidated power. We see only the

imperial standard, and contemplate only the majesty of Rome. But the real state of things under the dominion of the Eagle may in some measure be understood, by considering the present condition of the provinces and dominions subdued by the Russians, and added to the dominion of the Czar. In some parts are flourishing cities, Odessa for example, peopled by the conquering race, speaking their language and governed by their laws. In others (as in the Crimea generally) the Russians have become the owners of the soil, and the ancient rulers, the Tartar Mirzas and Khans, have been expelled; but the conquest has not displaced the ancient Tartar peasantry, who retain their former customs, and, as yet, are not greatly affected by the influence of the lords to whom they belong. A third class will consist of such provinces as Mingrelia, where the ancient rulers remain in their seats, though entirely controlled by a governor

thus exercised ; and he is, in theory, if not in practice, the uncontrolled master of the lives and fortunes of the Esthonian people, who, if he should think fit to act the despot, have no resource against his supreme authority. Lastly, in the so-called kingdom of Poland, there exists, by the grant and concession of the emperor, a "Diet," formed, in part, out of the original legislature possessed by the country when independent—but Russianized, remodelled, restricted, and re-formed—having a sufficient degree of consequence to prevent the Polish nation from being amalgamated into one mass with the Russians, and yet entirely incompetent to limit the Emperor's power, except so far as a discreet or benevolent Sovereign may think it just or expedient to give way to the opinion of his subjects, when respectfully expressed.

Now, if the Russian government were subverted, the cities to which I have alluded would still retain a portion of the organization which they have received. In the Provinces overspread by the Russians, the ancient races would regain their ascendancy, though they would probably retain (particularly in military discipline) many vestiges of the policy imparted by their late rulers. The third class of Provinces, or those whose dependent sovereigns are governed by the Court of St. Petersburg, would reappear in their primitive form, except so far as their Shahs or Sultans might think fit, as they probably would, to adopt such customs and principles as should tend either to enhance the splendour of their court, or to increase the authority which they would then enjoy, released from Russian supremacy. In the fourth class, in Esthonia and in Poland, the *Land-tag* and the *Diet* would gain in power, and acquire more consistency ; and, under favourable circumstances,—assuming, for instance,



that these legislatures continued to exist quietly, until the towns became opulent and the serfs free,—they might become substantial checks upon the prerogatives of any monarch by whom the country should be ruled.

All these suppositions are made upon the hypothesis of a mere dissolution of the Russian empire ; but if that dissolution were followed by an irruption of some much less civilized nation, say the Mongul Tartars, the features of the older dominion would be much more obscured ; many of the laws and customs of the invaders would be implanted by them : and the Russian laws and modes of government would be kept down by the customs of a wild nomadic people ; and yet the general relation of the parts of the empire towards each other would remain the same, unless it should happen that in any district all the ancient inhabitants were violently expelled.

The parallel between the Russian empire and the Ro-

Diocese—and the Dioceses into “Provinces,” subjected to Presidents, or Consulars, and Vicars, or Vice-presidents, each in their degree invested with the various powers of judicial government and civil policy. The military command of the provinces was principally intrusted to the “*Comites*,” each having his own district or territory. From the reign of Constantine, these functionaries held a conspicuous rank in the state. The *Comes*, or *Companion*, of Augustus was only his confidential friend; but the companions of the Cæsar were gradually erected into a dignified order, and the title became at length a designation both of military and civil dignity. Besides the military *Comites*, there were others in every department of the government. The title was particularly bestowed upon the attendants of the Imperial Court. There was a Count of the physicians, a Count of the wardrobe, a Count of the treasury, and a “*Comes stabuli*,” or Count of the stable,\* from whose station one of the proudest titles of the European monarchies was derived.

The Cities enjoyed considerable privileges, and possessed a distinct political existence. The ruling body, termed the *Curia*, was composed of *Senators* or *Decurions*: but, besides the main corporation, each city contained various “*colleges*,” companies, or guilds, of traders and artificers; and if I were a freemason, which I am not, I should perhaps be able to ascertain whether the “Lodge

\* As the *Comes stabuli*, or *Constable*, had the charge of the King's horses, he became, by an easy transition, the Marshal, or commander of the King's Cavalry, which in fact constituted the whole efficient body of the army. The hereditary Constables of Castile, of France, and of England, were all so powerful, that the sovereigns were glad to suppress a dignity which conferred an authority dangerous to the tranquillity of the monarchy. The office of Lord High Constable now exists only in Scotland, in the person of the Earl of Errol: on certain great occasions, some nobleman is made Lord High Constable of England for the day.

of Antiquity" at York is, as the members of the craft pretend, a real scion from the Roman stock, subsisting through so many changes.

The most absolute authority was vested in the Roman emperor,—Louis the Fourteenth's saying, "*L'état ; c'est moi*," is only another version of the *Lex Regia*, an edict by which, according to the theory of the civil law, all the powers of the state had been concentrated in the person of the "Imperial Majesty." As to the *Lex Regia*, it is certain that no such edict was ever passed or made by the Roman Senate, but the Emperors acted as if it had ; and a legal fiction, believed by government, and which no subject can dare to dispute, has quite as much validity as if it were the truth itself, and sustained by the most lawful authority. The Prefects and other Governors were, practically, and in their own departments, as despotic as the Emperor himself ; yet a species

resorted for that purpose to the Presence-Chamber, or according to the pompous phraseology of Byzantium, "*the sacred consistory*;" and then the Sovereign, if he thought fit, acceded to their request.

In point of form, this proceeding was very similar to that adopted by the Cortes of Castile, the States-general of France, and the Parliament of England. In all these assemblies, the subjects pray to the King for redress, and the answer to their petition constitutes the basis of the *Fuero*,\* Law, Ordinance, or Statute. But the members of the Roman provincial councils could not employ any of those useful ways and means for obtaining the attention of the sovereign, which render the decent and humble language of supplication virtually equivalent to a command. The Councils had no control over the supplies. With the exception of the "*aurum coronarium*," a *benevolence*, voluntary in name, but compulsory by inveterate custom, taxation resulted from the arbitrary decree of the Emperor; and to the edict by which the Cæsar imposed a tribute upon the world, the assent of the provincials was neither expected nor required. The sovereign had nothing to hope from their gratitude; the minister had nothing to fear from their displeasure. An impeachment, under the entire management of the Prefect, was the only power of judicature which the Councils possessed; and the laws which had been enacted upon their request, might, at any time, be revoked or rescinded by the sovereign will and irresponsible declaration of the Emperor. In many parts of the empire, such as Narbonensian Gaul, these councils appear to have been engrafted upon the institutions subsisting among the conquered nations before they were subdued.—Was

\* The Castilian term for any law or enactment.

— — — — —

...the ...

[illegible]

donations. Civil wars arose amongst the Romans; and the generals who obtained the victory, treated the allies and subjects of Rome with the same severity which they had used towards their enemies. Sylla, and afterwards Augustus, confiscated or seized the lands of several of the Italian cities, and divided these possessions amongst the soldiers who had fought in their service against other Romans. It was a sad day when the poor people of Mantua were compelled to quit the farms which they cultivated, and to give up their fields and their vineyards to the insulting stranger. I have mentioned Mantua, because we have the clearest description of the afflictions of this city in the ninth eclogue of Virgil. For thus was that great poet deprived of his little patrimony and reduced to the greatest distress, and compelled to seek his sustenance in the great city of Rome, where the talents which had been given to him became the means of raising him to imperishable fame.

The grants made to the soldiers who had served the Triumvirate, were not, like the donations which had in the elder time been bestowed upon the veterans, the well-earned reward of honourable valour. Gifts received in recompense for services performed in civil war, were, in truth, a recompense for evil-doing; and instead of encouraging the people to defend their country, the military were excited to hatred and dissension. All departure from justice is as foolish as it is wrong, and the Romans afforded full proof of this maxim. It became an easy step to bestow land upon the "Barbarians," in the expectation that they would become useful allies to the emperors. This was one of the principal causes of the decline of the empire, because the provinces were filled with inhabitants adverse to the well-being of the

state; who served the sovereign merely for profit, and who opened the path to their kinsmen, the implacable enemies of the Roman name. The Romans acted like a man who, being afraid of robbers, hires the brother of the depredators to stand as sentinel before his door.

First, these donations were made at the expense of other barbarians; but before the reign of Diocletian, the "*Liuti*," or "People,"\* as they are emphatically called, both by themselves and the Romans—the latter merely changing the term into *Læti*—were domiciled throughout the empire upon the "*Lætic*" lands, of which they received possession by the writ or rescript of the emperor. Two German tribes, the Quadi and the Marcomanni, were thus rewarded by the possession of lands in Britain. The progeny of the Tungrians, who, brought over as allies by Agricola, warred against the Caledonians, became the owners as well as the defenders of the wilds which they subdued.† The word *Liuti*, or

Thracians, whose forefathers had been transplanted from the remotest parts of the empire, obtained their domicile in various parts of our island, though principally upon the northern and eastern coasts, and in the neighbourhood of the Roman walls.

The donations of these Lætic lands had branched abusively out of the general system of defence; which, with few exceptions, was founded upon the principle of paying the soldier by giving him land. Thus the *March* or border countries were granted almost exclusively to the "Limitanean" soldiery, upon conditions which have been well described as containing the germ of the "feudal tenures." The valleys and passes of the mountains, and the banks of the great frontier rivers, were tilled by the martial husbandmen, who could only secure their harvests by warding off the incursions of the enemy. Such land could not be alienated to a non-military owner. The property descended from the father to the son, and the son at the age of eighteen years was compelled to gird himself with the baldrick, and to join the legion to which his parent belonged.

The "Limitanean" soldiers, as their name imports, continued settled on the borders; but in the same manner, or nearly so, were all the other Roman legions rooted and fixed in the interior of Britain. After the establishment of the Imperial government, they were not, like our regiments in the colonies, changed and removed from time to time, but permanently established on and in the island. The son of the veteran was compelled to follow the profession of his father. Military service was an imperative obligation upon all of military race. The soldiery constituted not only an "Estate" distinct from the rest of the people, but also



a ruling Caste, from whose will the sovereign power was derived.

Perhaps there was never any community in the world, civilized or semi-civilized, in which the succession to the supreme authority was so utterly without law or rule as the Roman empire. Good fortune was the only standard of legitimacy.—Aurelian, a sturdy Dacian, is hailed as emperor by the legions on the shore of the Danube. Quintilian is recognized by the voice and suffrage of the legions of Rome, and the approbation of all Italy; but Aurelian prevails, and he is considered as the lawful possessor of the Roman world.

The General who could only retain a Province or a Diocese, is called a Tyrant; that is to say, an illegal Pretender. But let an example be selected, and the justice of such a title will entirely disappear.—Gaul and Spain and Britain, or the Prefecture of the Gauls, were

as emperor by the legions at Toulouse, was invested with the imperial purple by the "Honorati" of Arles, we may estimate the share which the provincial legislatures possessed in the nomination of the provincial "Tyrants." The soldiers elected the Emperor, the Council ratified the election; and in the eye of reason, it may appear that these sovereigns, who are stigmatized as usurpers, had, perhaps, a better title than the rulers who are considered as legitimate merely because they were recognized at Rome.—What was the Roman Senate?—Certainly it bore an honoured and venerable name; but the Patricians who trembled in the chairs of Cato and Cicero were the mere creatures and nominees of the Emperor; whilst the provincial assemblies participated in all the feelings and opinions of their countrymen, and virtually represented the wealth and respectability of the land. Unconscious of the ends which they were destined to accomplish, the Provincial Emperors may be considered as the precursors of the barbarian dynasties. The revolutions sustained by the provinces under their government gave an impulse, which ultimately caused the kingdoms of modern Christendom to spring out of the fourth great monarchy of the Gentiles.

The political ancestry of the ancient monarchs of Anglo-Saxon Britain, must therefore be sought amongst the sovereigns who are expunged from the regular series of the Cæsars, and put at the bottom of the page by the chronologists of the empire. Britain was said to be singularly fertile in "Tyrants;" or, in other words, the opulent province made strong efforts to detach itself from Rome, and to acquire independence. But the history of these times is extremely imperfect. The jejune and feeble writers of the Augustan history afford our chief

materials (A.D. 280): and though we know that the first of these British Tyrants was slain by his competitor Probus, we are not able to tell his name.

Carausius obtained a more durable ascendancy. He was a Menapian by birth. The nation whence he originated had been divided by its migrations into several colonies (A.D. 257-264): one was settled in Hibernia, another was found in the islands of the Rhine; and the Menapia, or Menevia, of Britain, now St. David's, seems also to have belonged to these tribes. Carausius was born in Britain, according to an authority which we are at present compelled to receive with some hesitation, and opposed to the Roman writers, who call him the "foster son of Batavia." Yet, for the credit of Richard of Cirencester, the writer to whom I allude, it may be remarked that the same uncertainty prevails with respect to many of the Emperors, and most of the "Tyrants." The contra-

mian, the Emperors who then ruled, orders were sent from Rome to put Carausius to death. But he evaded the fatal messenger ; and the wealth which he had earned by his exploits, as well as the reputation which he gained in his victories, persuaded the British legions and auxiliaries to hail him as Augustus, and to bestow upon him the imperial diadem.

Maximian, who made some fruitless attempts to rid himself of this rival, was repelled with disgrace. The Emperor of Britain—whose dominions included Boulogne, and the adjoining coast of Gaul—used every exertion to maintain his sovereignty ; he built vessels of war, and raised great forces, inviting to his service the barbarians against whom he had fought, and to whose native courage and maritime skill was now added the regular discipline of the Roman soldier. The numerous medals struck by Carausius are no inadequate tokens of the wealth and splendour which graced his reign ; and the inscriptions and devices with which they are impressed, display the pomp and state which he assumed in his island empire. Ruling in Britain, “ Marcus Aurelius Valerius Carausius,” for he had borrowed these impressive names, was ranked as the “ brother ” of Diocletian and Maximian. The fleets of Carausius sailed triumphant ; and from the columns of Hercules to the mouths of the Rhine, his standard ruled the seas. When Constantius was associated to the purple, he prepared to dispossess Carausius of his dominions ; and by a bold and fortunate enterprise, the British fleet stationed at Boulogne was compelled to surrender. Constantius then prepared for the invasion of Britain ; but in the meanwhile, domestic conspiracies had arisen (A.D. 294-297), and Carausius was slain at York by the dagger of

Allectus his friend and minister, who succeeded to the imperial dignity.

The details of the succession of the provincial emperors, so improperly called "Tyrants," who either ruled in Britain alone, or in Britain as a part of the prefecture of the Gauls, must be omitted until we arrive at the reign of Maximus, an able and fortunate general. By some historians he is described as a Briton, and yet as allied to the imperial family. He disputed the empire with Gratian (A.D. 362-386); and the Bretons of Armorica, or the "*Lesser Britain*," in Gaul, believed that their nation sprang from the flower and youth of this island, who accompanied him in this enterprise. The exploits of Maximus belong rather to the general history of the Roman empire, than to the particular history of Britain. It is sufficient to observe that, after his death at Aquileia, Theodorus reannexed the province of Britain to his



North Wall of Richborough.



whose primitive rudeness was unaffected by the civilization which the Roman conquests had imparted to their brethren. Tamed animals are always persecuted by the wild creatures of their own species, and the Picts bore the greatest antipathy to their ancient kinsmen. The first inroads of the Picts (A.D. 306) were easily repelled. But when the *Scots* arrived from the opposite coast of Erin, the union of the forces of these barbarians enabled them to pursue their operations with great success. The united hordes of the Picts and the Scots rushed from the North like a torrent; attacked and plundered London; and though this invasion was repelled by Theodosius (A.D. 367-368), still the northern districts were never afterwards reduced to order and tranquillity.

The *Scots* were the relatives of the Cymri, being another branch of the great Celtic nation, and who, at a period far beyond all authentic history, had established themselves in *Hibernia*, *Erin*, or *Ireland*. Hence, that island, from its predominant population, was generally called *Scotia*, or *Insula Scotorum*, by the writers of the sixth and seventh centuries. This is a circumstance which has often been forgotten, but it is of great importance to recollect it, for the name of *Scotia*, or *Scotland*, as applied to the northern portion of Britain, is comparatively of modern origin. These Irish Scots appear to have begun by spreading themselves in straggling settlements on the coast of Argyle and the neighbouring shores, forming little clans, or even families, not owing obedience to any common chieftain, and without any regular government. The land was sterile, the Pictish population thin and scanty, and therefore the original inhabitants do not appear to have opposed the Scottish settlements. Reuda, who arrived with rather a large



train of followers, seems to have been the first who acquired any permanent authority amongst the British Scots ; and from him they are said to have been called *Dalreudini* or *Dalriads*. But the princes afterwards governing these nations (A.D. 986), claimed to be descended from Fergus, the son of Erc, who, with his brother Lourn, reigned towards the close of the fifth century. There was probably a flux and reflux of population ; and the history of these tribes is much clouded by fable. But the main facts are satisfactorily established ; and there is no reason to doubt but that the Scots had emigrated from Ireland, and obtained a small tract of country, as before described. Another colony was settled, though at what period is uncertain, in the country called Galloway : here they appear also to have been blended with the Picts, perhaps some of the tribes who had assisted in the war.

We must now advert to another nation, destined to

Saxons ; but it is most probable that they, like the Scots, succeeded in fixing themselves in some portion of the district ; for it appears a strange anomaly, that a country should be named, not from its inhabitants, but from its assailants ; and in the "Littus Saxonicum" of Gaul, afterwards included in Normandy, they had obtained a permanent domicile not far from Baieux.

Either flocking from these settlements, or passing from beyond the sea, the Saxons joined the Picts and the Scots in their great invasion. The victory of Theodosius (A.D. 368) produced a temporary calm ; but he was compelled to follow the host of the pirates to the extremity of the British islands, and the distant Orcades were drenched with Saxon gore.

Whilst these events were taking place in Britain, hordes of barbarians continued pouring into Gaul and Italy. The Roman emperors, Arcadius and Honorius, were compelled to abandon Britain to its fate (A.D. 406-418). Marcus and Gratian, successively hailed as Emperors by the British legions, passed away like shadows. Constantine, who was raised from the ranks by his well-omened name, and promoted to the Imperial dignity in Britain, obtained more considerable, though transient power. At length the connexion between Britain and Rome was entirely severed. Britain broke, as it were, into various independent and rival communities—and the sovereigns contended amongst themselves for the empire, whilst the hosts of the enemy were thickening around them.

As far as we can judge, two great parties prevailed in the southern tracts of our island. A Roman party, headed by Aurelius Ambrosius, a chieftain of imperial descent, who claimed or acquired the Imperial dignity ;

and another, supporting the cause of the too famous Vortigern. During these contentions, the Scots and the Picts continued their predatory warfare, and reduced the country to the greatest misery (A.D. 430). Any degree of union amongst the Britons might have enabled them to repel their enemies. The walls of the cities fortified by the Romans were yet strong and firm. The tactics of the legions were not forgotten. Bright armour was piled in the storehouses, and the serried line of spears might have been presented to the half naked Scots and Picts, who could never have prevailed against their opponents. But the Britons had no inclination to lift the sword, except against each other. Humbly and pitifully imploring the Romans for help, they lost all courage, except for faction, when the Romans could not comply, but left them to their own resources. The most ancient historian of this disturbed and lamentable period, is Gildas, himself the son of a British king, and he bears





## Chapter II.

*Hengist and Horsa: their supposed Transactions with Vortigern—Progress of the Invaders—Conquest of Britain by the Jutes, Angles, and Saxons—Kingdoms founded by them—Kent, Sussex, Wessex, East Anglia, Essex, Deira, Bernicia, Mercia—Subjugation of the Britons.*

THE “three tribes of Germany”—the *Jutes*, the *Angles*, and the *Saxons*, by whom Britain was subdued, seem originally to have constituted but one nation, speaking the same language, and ruled by monarchs who all claimed their descent from the deified monarch of the *Tentons*, *Woden* or *Odin*. They frequently changed their position on the firm land of Europe, as the stream of population rolled forward, impelled by the secondary causes, prepared and destined to act in fulfilment of the decree by which the enlargement of Japhet had been foretold.

The *Jutes*, together with their neighbours the *Angles*, dwelt in the peninsula of *Jutland*, or the “*Cimbric Chersonesus*,” and in the adjoining *Holstein*, where there is still a district called *Anglen*. That, in fact, is the real *Old England*; and, properly speaking, our “*Old England*” is *New England*, though now we give that name to a province in America. The *Saxons* were more widely dispersed. *Ptolemy* places them in the *Cimbric Chersonesus*, near the *Jutes* and *Angles*; but they afterwards occupied a much larger extent, from the *Delta* of the *Rhine* to the *Weser*. After the migration of the *Saxons* to Britain, the name of *Old Saxons* was given to the parent stock. One very large body of *Saxon*

population occupied the present Westphalia; but the tribes by whom Britain was invaded, appear principally to have proceeded from the country now called Friesland; for of all the continental dialects, the ancient Frisick is the one which approaches most nearly to the Anglo-Saxon of our ancestors.

It is necessary, however, to remark, that the name "*Saxon*" appears rather to have been intended to denote a confederacy of tribes, than to have originally belonged to any one nation.—Learned men have sought for the etymology of the term in the "*Seax*" or short sword, a weapon with which they were armed. These and other suppositions, upon which I have not room to enlarge, are, however, after all, only ingenious sports and fancies. We possess but a very small number of authentic facts concerning the early history of the barbarian nations of the West; and, though the general outline of their position upon the ethnographical map can be understood







Richly-ornamented Saxon Seat.

It is said by some writers, that Vortigern married Rowena, the daughter of Hengist. She was very beautiful; and when introduced by her father at the royal banquet of the British King, she advanced gracefully and modestly towards him, bearing in her hand a golden goblet filled with wine. Young people, even of the highest rank, were accustomed to wait upon their elders, or those unto whom they wished to show respect, and therefore the appearance of Rowena as the cup-bearer of the feast was neither unbecoming nor unseemly. And when Rowena came near unto Vortigern, she said, in her own Saxon language,—“*Wæs heal, hlaford Comung;*”—which means “Health to thee, my Lord King.” Vortigern did not understand the salutation of Rowena, but the words were explained to him by an interpreter. “*Drinc heal,*”—“Drink thou health,”—was the accustomed answer, and the memory of the event was preserved in merry old England by the *wassail-cup*—a cup full of spiced wine or good ale, which was handed round from guest to guest, at the banquet and the festival. Well, therefore, might Rowena be recollected on high tides and holidays, for the introduction of this concomitant of good cheer.

The expectations of the Jutes increased with their power. Further demands were made upon the Britons—an increase of reward—a larger territory. Refusal provoked hostility; the Jutes joined with the Scots and Picts, and ravaged Britain from East to West. An interval of ill fortune ensued, during which the Jutes were compelled to leave the island, but they speedily returned with greater force. They craved peace from the Britons, and a banquet was held to celebrate the pacification. The treacherous Hengist instructed his

companions to conceal their short swords beneath their garments. At the signal, which he gave by exclaiming, "*Nimed eure saxes*,"\* they drew their weapons. The British Nobles were slain; Vortigern was taken prisoner, and the Jutes gained possession of Kent, and extended their dominion over a considerable portion of the adjoining country.

These details have been told so often, that they acquire a kind of prescriptive right to credit; but I believe that they bear no nearer relation to the real history of Anglo-Saxon England, than the story of Æneas, as related by Virgil, does to the real history of the foundation of Rome. Nothing can be more unlikely than that Vortigern should have invited over these implacable enemies of Britain, "the Dragons of Germany," as they are called by the bards, for the purpose of warring against the Scots and Picts, with whom they or their kinsmen had been so recently allied. We may seek for the

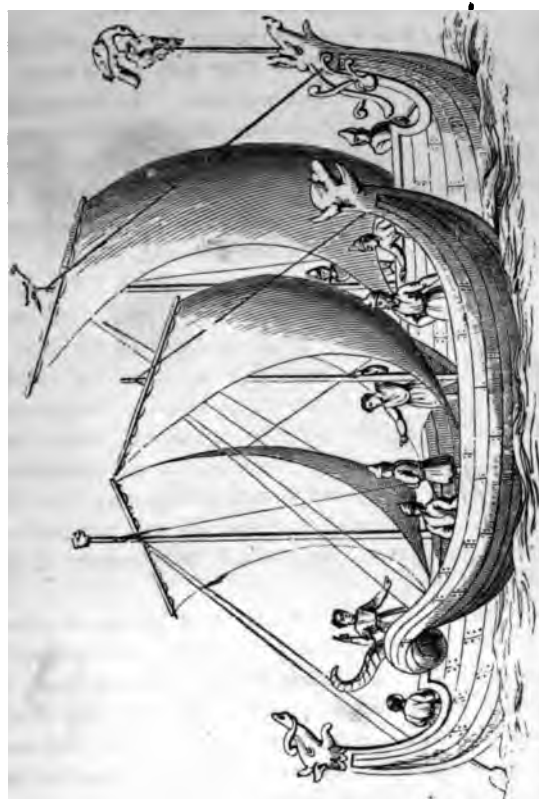
Their acquisition of the Isle of Thanet from the British King may perhaps be credited. As I have observed, it was a grant in the nature of those which the Romans made to the *Liuti*, yet not so much as the price of aid to be obtained from the threatening colony, as for the purpose of warding off further hostility.

Thanet is now divided from the rest of Kent by a narrow rill, crossed by an arch of the smallest span. The rill was then a channel, nearly a mile in width; and in this isle, the Jutes, possessing the command of the sea, could well maintain themselves against their disunited enemies. Several years, however, of constant warfare elapsed before "*Cantwara Land*," or Kent, became their dominion (A.D. 457, 473, 488); and Eric, the son of Hengist, appears to have been the first real king of the country; for he, and not his father Hengist, was honoured as founder of the Kentish dynasty. From the spear which he wielded, or the vessel which bore him over the waves, he was surnamed "*Æsc*," or *Ash-tree*; and *Æscingas*, or *Sons of the Ash-tree*, did the kings of Kent, his descendants, call themselves so long as their dynasty endured. When *Æsc* was fairly settled in his rich and fertile kingdom, he laid down the sword: his son and his son's son lived equally in peaceful obscurity. Ethelbert, fourth in descent from *Æsc*, gave great splendour to the state (A.D. 568-616); but Kent soon sunk into the condition of a dependent principality, beneath the sway of its more powerful rivals and neighbours. No portion of our island has continued more truly Anglo-Saxon than "*Cantwara Land*." The fair-haired Kentish yeoman bears in his countenance the stamp of his remote ancestry; and the existence of the *gavel kind* tenure in Kent, or the custom whereby the land becomes divisible

among all the children, instead of descending to the eldest, is a singular proof of the steadiness or good fortune which enabled the Kentish men to assert their franchises, when all England yielded to the Norman sway.

Whilst the Jutes were conquering Kent, their kindred took part in the war. Ship after ship sailed from the North Sea, filled with eager warriors. The Saxons now arrived—Ella and his three sons landed in the ancient territory of the Regni (A.D. 477-491). The Britons were defeated with great slaughter, and driven into the forest of *Andreade*, whose extent is faintly indicated by the wastes and commons of the Weald.

A general confederacy of the Kings and "Tyrants" of the Britons was formed against the invaders, but fresh reinforcements arrived from Germany; the city of *Andreades-Ceastre* was taken by storm, all its inhabitants were slain, and the buildings razed to the ground, so that its site is now entirely unknown. From this



Saxon Ship.



"Woodlands of Dyfnaint," or Damnonia, may have been avenged, but the power of the Saxons overwhelmed all opposition ; and Cerdic, associating his son Cynric in the dignity, became the King of the territory which he gained. Under Cynric and his son Ceanlin, the Saxons slowly, yet steadily, gained ground. The utmost extent of their dominions towards the North cannot be ascertained ; but they had conquered the town of Bedford : and it was probably in consequence of their geographical position (A.D. 571) with respect to the countries of the *Middle* and *East Saxons*, that the name of the *West Saxons* was given to this colony. The tract north of the Thames was soon lost ; but on the south of that river and of the Severn, the successors of Cerdic, Kings of *Wessex*, continued to extend their dominions. The Hampshire *Avon*, which retains its old Celtic name, signifying *the Water*, seems at first to have been their boundary. Beyond this river, the British Princes of Damnonia retained their power ; and it was long before the country as far as the Exe became a Saxon March-land, or border.

About the time that the Saxons under Cerdic and Cynric were successfully warring against the Britons, another colony was seen to establish itself in the territory or kingdom which, from its geographical position, obtained the name of *East Saxony* ; but whereof the district of the *Middle Saxons*, now *Middlesex*, formed a part. London, as you well know, is locally included in *Middle Saxony* ; and the Kings of *Essex*, and the other sovereigns who afterwards acquired the country, certainly possessed many extensive rights of sovereignty in the city. Yet, I doubt much whether London was ever incorporated in any Anglo-Saxon kingdom ; and I think we must view it as a weak, tributary, vassal state, not



very well able to resist the usurpations of the supreme Lord or Suzerain, Æscwin, or Ercenwine, who was the first King of the East Saxons (A.D. 527). His son Sleda was married to Ricola, daughter to Ethelbert of Kent, who afterwards appears as the superior, or sovereign of the country; and though Sleda was King, yet Ethelbert joined in all important acts of government. This was the fate of Essex—it is styled a kingdom, but it never enjoyed any political independence, being always subjected to the adjoining kings.

Thus did the Jutes and the Saxons resort to Britain; and now came the Angles—and in such numbers, that *Old England* was almost emptied of its inhabitants; and the district continued very thinly peopled, even in the days of Venerable Bede. The tribes dwelling in the adjoining tracts did not occupy the country, although they continued pouring forth their colonies into many other parts of the world; nor was it replenished by the

places expanding into  *meres*  and  *broads* , the country had nearly the appearance of a peninsula. At the isthmus where these natural defences ended, the East Anglians cast up a very strong fortification, consisting of a deep moat and a lofty rampart. In the middle ages it was often called the " *Beck dyke* ,"\* or  *Giant's dyke* : the common people attributed it to the Fiend. The heath through which the rampart extends, not having been subjected to cultivation, the  *Devil's Dyke*  is yet very entire, and is one of the most remarkable monuments of its kind. But the marshes have been drained, and Croyland and Thorney no longer rise like islands in the midst of a marshy lake; though still the nature of the fen countries is not entirely altered; and the traveller can easily picture to himself the ancient state of the district before it was recovered from the floods. Uffa was the first of the East Anglian chieftains who acquired the title of a King, within the boundaries which I have thus described. And as the kings of Kent were known as  *Æscingas* , so were the sovereigns of East Anglia distinguished by the patronymic of  *Uffingas* , or sons of  *Uffa* . But their annals have been almost wholly lost; and the history of East Anglia is nearly a blank in the Chronicles of England.

The British kingdoms of Deyfyr and Bryneich (latinised into Deira and Bernicia), extending from the Humber

\* Not, as Camden supposes, from the village of  *Retch*  (Cambridgeshire), but from  *Recke*  or  *Riege* , (Germ. and Isl.) a Giant, a Hero, a being possessed of preternatural power. The term may be found in all the Gothic dialects. Like the cognate  *Res*  and  *Rajah* , it is primarily to be deduced from  *Rich*  or  *Reich* , dominion or power.  *Wealth*  is power, and hence  *Rice* , or  *rich* , assumed the secondary sense which it now bears. In the Anglo-Saxon, however, it more usually (though not invariably) retains its primary sense—*s.g.* "He awearps the  *ricas*  of sette. Deposuit  *potentes*  de sede." He hath put down the mighty from their seat. In the phrase " *Ricos*  hombres," the Castilian has retained the Gothic appellation of his ancestors.  *Kingrick* , for kingdom, remained in use, till recent times, in Scotland.

to the Frith of Forth, were divided from each other by a forest, occupying the tract between the Tyne and Tees; and which, unreclaimed by man, was abandoned to the wild-deer. Properly speaking, this border-land does not seem originally to have belonged to either kingdom; but, in subsequent times, the boundary between Deira and Bernicia was usually fixed at the Tyne. The trans-humbrane countries were exposed at an early period to the attacks of the Jutes and Saxons. Some chroniclers say, that Octa and Ebusa, sons of Hengist, conquered a portion of the country. At the onset, the invaders made little progress. The Britons of the neighbouring Reged and Strathclyde, governed by valiant Princes, the descendants of the Roman Maximus, appear to have possessed more unity than their brethren in the South; and their efforts supported the population of Deira and Bernicia in resisting their enemies. The scale was evenly poised until the English Ida landed at the pro-

The massy keep yet stands ; and the voyager, following  
the course of the Abbess of St. Hilda, may yet see

" King Ida's castle huge and square  
From its tall rock look grimly down,  
And on the swelling ocean frown."

Ida's dominions were intersected by tracts still belonging to the Britons, who ultimately yielded to the invaders. In Deira, the progress of the Angles or English was slow : York, it is true, had been plundered by the Saxons (A.D. 504), and Archbishop Sampson compelled to take refuge in Armorica or Brittany ; but until the accession of Ella (A.D. 559-560), Deira is not known to have been subjected to an English king. Ella was not of the same family as Ida. Both were children of Woden ; but Ida was descended from the fifth son of the fabled monarch, whilst Ella traced his ancestry to Baldeg, the sixth son, from whom the kings of Wessex were also descended. Ida had twelve sons. Six of these are said to have reigned in succession after him, one after another. This statement seems to be improbable ; and I should rather think that they took distinct principalities, or portions of the kingdom. Ella, king of Deira, appears to have compelled the sons of Ida to become tributary to him (A.D. 559-560). And the two houses of Bernicia and Deira continued, during several years, in a state of rivalry and hostility. Deira ultimately prevailed in the person of Edwin. The two states were now usually known by the collective name of *Northumbria* (A.D. 617). Though not united into one community, they were generally governed by one monarch ; and the kingdom became, for a time, the most powerful in Anglo-Saxon Britain.

The country adjoining the English settlements of East Anglia and Deira, and which bordered on the lands of the British tribes, obtained the name of the *March*, or

boundary. The English chieftains who settled in it, seem originally to have considered themselves as freed from any control ; but Creoda, their first king (A.D. 585-593), who appears to have been the Ruler of the Middle Angles, must have been a vassal under the supremacy of Northumbria. Penda, a fierce and valiant warrior, cast off this allegiance : the *March* or *Mercia* was now established as an independent state (A.D. 626-655) ; and though more than once reduced to subjection, either by Northumbria or by Wessex, its sovereigns continued to extend their dominions at the expense of the Britons, until at length, having acquired all the midland parts of Loegria,\* the Britons of Cambria were exposed to their constant hostility. That a portion of the dominions of Wessex passed into Mercia, has been already noticed. London was afterwards wrested by the Mercians from the West Saxons, and the geographical extent of the state perhaps

ever seven kingdoms independent of each other. And if we include those kingdoms which were subservient to larger states, the number must be increased. The nephew of Cerdic ruled the Isle of Wight with regal title. In Mercia, the chieftain of "*Hwiccas*"\* had as much authority in his good city of Worcester, as the king of *Essex* had in London. But, however divided, the nations whom we term Anglo-Saxons were thus possessed of the best parts of Britain, whilst the Cymri were driven to the western side of the island, and principally those districts where the natural fortifications of moors and mountains, and lakes, and woods, enabled them to withstand their invaders.

Part of the Britons retained possession of Strathclyde and Cumbria, extending from Alcluyd, now called Dunbreton, or Dunbarton—the *Dun* or fortress of the Britons,—to the southern borders of Lancashire; whilst the ridge of mountains, not unaptly termed the British Apennines, separated them from Northumbria.†

Another great mass of British population continued in possession of *Damnonia* or Devonshire, with its dependency, *Cernaw* or Cornwall, which countries the Saxons called *West Wales* (about A.D. 636). Here the Britons, although their enemies were daily gaining ground upon them, still dreamt that they retained the monarchy of Britain, until Cadwallader, surnamed "Bhendyged," or the Blessed, resigned his crown, and went to Rome, where he died, a penitent and a pilgrim. Many of the Britons fled beyond sea to Armorica: those who remained behind seem to have consisted chiefly of the peasantry. The Britons then took their stand beyond

\* Gloucester, Worcester, and part of Warwickshire. See Map II.

† See Maps II. and IV.

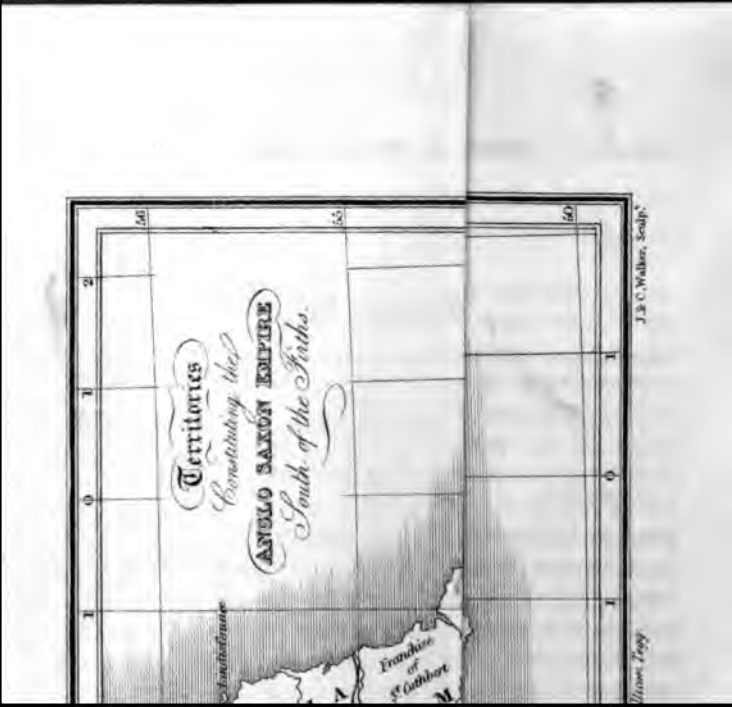
the Exe, and afterwards beyond the Tamar, until at length they submitted to the English ascendancy, and lost every trace of national power.

Lastly, the noblest of the Britons maintained themselves in Cambria, or Wales. The Anglo-Saxons, and particularly the Mercians, more than once overran their country; but the Cymri defended themselves amidst their fastnesses. They detested the Saxons, and would neither conform to the Saxon customs nor the Saxon laws. The Romanized Britons of Loegria appear to have united more readily to their invaders. I apprehend that they possessed less nationality; and sometimes even national prejudices are the safeguards of independence. In the kingdoms or principalities of the Western Cymr of which, according to a nomenclature of perhaps late origin, the states of Gwynedd, Deheubarth, Powys, or Gwent,\* were the most important, the old lines of dynasties of Princes continued unbroken: many sub-



1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30  
31  
32  
33  
34  
35  
36  
37  
38  
39  
40  
41  
42  
43  
44  
45  
46  
47  
48  
49  
50  
51  
52  
53  
54  
55  
56  
57  
58  
59  
60  
61  
62  
63  
64  
65  
66  
67  
68  
69  
70  
71  
72  
73  
74  
75  
76  
77  
78  
79  
80  
81  
82  
83  
84  
85  
86  
87  
88  
89  
90  
91  
92  
93  
94  
95  
96  
97  
98  
99  
100  
101  
102  
103  
104  
105  
106  
107  
108  
109  
110  
111  
112  
113  
114  
115  
116  
117  
118  
119  
120  
121  
122  
123  
124  
125  
126  
127  
128  
129  
130  
131  
132  
133  
134  
135  
136  
137  
138  
139  
140  
141  
142  
143  
144  
145  
146  
147  
148  
149  
150  
151  
152  
153  
154  
155  
156  
157  
158  
159  
160  
161  
162  
163  
164  
165  
166  
167  
168  
169  
170  
171  
172  
173  
174  
175  
176  
177  
178  
179  
180  
181  
182  
183  
184  
185  
186  
187  
188  
189  
190  
191  
192  
193  
194  
195  
196  
197  
198  
199  
200  
201  
202  
203  
204  
205  
206  
207  
208  
209  
210  
211  
212  
213  
214  
215  
216  
217  
218  
219  
220  
221  
222  
223  
224  
225  
226  
227  
228  
229  
230  
231  
232  
233  
234  
235  
236  
237  
238  
239  
240  
241  
242  
243  
244  
245  
246  
247  
248  
249  
250  
251  
252  
253  
254  
255  
256  
257  
258  
259  
260  
261  
262  
263  
264  
265  
266  
267  
268  
269  
270  
271  
272  
273  
274  
275  
276  
277  
278  
279  
280  
281  
282  
283  
284  
285  
286  
287  
288  
289  
290  
291  
292  
293  
294  
295  
296  
297  
298  
299  
300  
301  
302  
303  
304  
305  
306  
307  
308  
309  
310  
311  
312  
313  
314  
315  
316  
317  
318  
319  
320  
321  
322  
323  
324  
325  
326  
327  
328  
329  
330  
331  
332  
333  
334  
335  
336  
337  
338  
339  
340  
341  
342  
343  
344  
345  
346  
347  
348  
349  
350  
351  
352  
353  
354  
355  
356  
357  
358  
359  
360  
361  
362  
363  
364  
365  
366  
367  
368  
369  
370  
371  
372  
373  
374  
375  
376  
377  
378  
379  
380  
381  
382  
383  
384  
385  
386  
387  
388  
389  
390  
391  
392  
393  
394  
395  
396  
397  
398  
399  
400  
401  
402  
403  
404  
405  
406  
407  
408  
409  
410  
411  
412  
413  
414  
415  
416  
417  
418  
419  
420  
421  
422  
423  
424  
425  
426  
427  
428  
429  
430  
431  
432  
433  
434  
435  
436  
437  
438  
439  
440  
441  
442  
443  
444  
445  
446  
447  
448  
449  
450  
451  
452  
453  
454  
455  
456  
457  
458  
459  
460  
461  
462  
463  
464  
465  
466  
467  
468  
469  
470  
471  
472  
473  
474  
475  
476  
477  
478  
479  
480  
481  
482  
483  
484  
485  
486  
487  
488  
489  
490  
491  
492  
493  
494  
495  
496  
497  
498  
499  
500  
501  
502  
503  
504  
505  
506  
507  
508  
509  
510  
511  
512  
513  
514  
515  
516  
517  
518  
519  
520  
521  
522  
523  
524  
525  
526  
527  
528  
529  
530  
531  
532  
533  
534  
535  
536  
537  
538  
539  
540  
541  
542  
543  
544  
545  
546  
547  
548  
549  
550  
551  
552  
553  
554  
555  
556  
557  
558  
559  
560  
561  
562  
563  
564  
565  
566  
567  
568  
569  
570  
571  
572  
573  
574  
575  
576  
577  
578  
579  
580  
581  
582  
583  
584  
585  
586  
587  
588  
589  
590  
591  
592  
593  
594  
595  
596  
597  
598  
599  
600  
601  
602  
603  
604  
605  
606  
607  
608  
609  
610  
611  
612  
613  
614  
615  
616  
617  
618  
619  
620  
621  
622  
623  
624  
625  
626  
627  
628  
629  
630  
631  
632  
633  
634  
635  
636  
637  
638  
639  
640  
641  
642  
643  
644  
645  
646  
647  
648  
649  
650  
651  
652  
653  
654  
655  
656  
657  
658  
659  
660  
661  
662  
663  
664  
665  
666  
667  
668  
669  
670  
671  
672  
673  
674  
675  
676  
677  
678  
679  
680  
681  
682  
683  
684  
685  
686  
687  
688  
689  
690  
691  
692  
693  
694  
695  
696  
697  
698  
699  
700  
701  
702  
703  
704  
705  
706  
707  
708  
709  
710  
711  
712  
713  
714  
715  
716  
717  
718  
719  
720  
721  
722  
723  
724  
725  
726  
727  
728  
729  
730  
731  
732  
733  
734  
735  
736  
737  
738  
739  
740  
741  
742  
743  
744  
745  
746  
747  
748  
749  
750  
751  
752  
753  
754  
755  
756  
757  
758  
759  
760  
761  
762  
763  
764  
765  
766  
767  
768  
769  
770  
771  
772  
773  
774  
775  
776  
777  
778  
779  
780  
781  
782  
783  
784  
785  
786  
787  
788  
789  
790  
791  
792  
793  
794  
795  
796  
797  
798  
799  
800  
801  
802  
803  
804  
805  
806  
807  
808  
809  
810  
811  
812  
813  
814  
815  
816  
817  
818  
819  
820  
821  
822  
823  
824  
825  
826  
827  
828  
829  
830  
831  
832  
833  
834  
835  
836  
837  
838  
839  
840  
841  
842  
843  
844  
845  
846  
847  
848  
849  
850  
851  
852  
853  
854  
855  
856  
857  
858  
859  
860  
861  
862  
863  
864  
865  
866  
867  
868  
869  
870  
871  
872  
873  
874  
875  
876  
877  
878  
879  
880  
881  
882  
883  
884  
885  
886  
887  
888  
889  
890  
891  
892  
893  
894  
895  
896  
897  
898  
899  
900  
901  
902  
903  
904  
905  
906  
907  
908  
909  
910  
911  
912  
913  
914  
915  
916  
917  
918  
919  
920  
921  
922  
923  
924  
925  
926  
927  
928  
929  
930  
931  
932  
933  
934  
935  
936  
937  
938  
939  
940  
941  
942  
943  
944  
945  
946  
947  
948  
949  
950  
951  
952  
953  
954  
955  
956  
957  
958  
959  
960  
961  
962  
963  
964  
965  
966  
967  
968  
969  
970  
971  
972  
973  
974  
975  
976  
977  
978  
979  
980  
981  
982  
983  
984  
985  
986  
987  
988  
989  
990  
991  
992  
993  
994  
995  
996  
997  
998  
999  
1000





### Chapter III.

*Heathenism of the Anglo-Saxons—Deities worshipped by them—Origin of the Papal Authority—Pope Gregory undertakes the Conversion of Anglo-Saxon Britain—Missions of Augustine and Paulinus—Temporal Effects of the Introduction of Christianity—Ethelbert of Kent and Edwin of Northumbria—Conversion of those Kings—Foundation of the Sees of Canterbury and London.*

AMONGST the heathen, we may discern several shades or gradations of delusion. Some nations, like the Mexicans, have so entirely renounced the Divine assistance, as to be allowed to fall into absolute devil-worship; knowingly and wittingly worshipping the sources of evil, and attempting to propitiate the demons whom they adore, by actions which they must confess to be crimes. Others have erred, not so much by denying the Almighty, as by bestowing his attributes upon his creatures, to whom they have rendered the worship due to the Creator. The sun going forth in his course, the moon walking in brightness, and the starry host of heaven, have all received the honour appertaining only to the power by whom they were framed. Nor has this idolatry been confined to inanimate objects; for the lawgivers, the rulers, and the warriors of the people, have been deified by the ignorance or fraud of their subjects or disciples. This sin against the Divine Majesty may exist in fact, although not acknowledged in form. Whenever any veneration is rendered to human virtue, any respect paid to human wisdom, or any confidence placed in human power, in such a manner as to render us unmindful that



our talents are the free gifts of Providence, we err, even as if we offered the hecatomb to Apollo, or burnt the incense before Baal.

The religion of the Anglo-Saxons, in general,—it is not in our power to distinguish between particular tribes,—was evidently a compound of the worship of the celestial bodies, or *Sabæism*, as it is termed, and of hero-worship; and the Anglo-Saxon names of the days of the week enable us to give a compendium of their creed.

*Sunnandæg* and *Monandæg*, or Sunday and Monday, scarcely need a version. It must be remarked, however, that, contrary to the mythology of the Greeks and Romans, the Sun was considered by all the Teutons as a female, and the Moon as a male deity. They had an odd notion that if they addressed that power as a goddess, their wives would be their masters.

The third day of the week, following the two great festivals of Sunday and Monday, was known amongst

Anglo-Saxons claimed, as I have before observed, to be considered as his progeny. In the Scandinavian "*Sagas*," or romances, Odin appears as the leader by whom the "Axi," or Northmen, were conducted to the shores of the Baltic from their original clime, perhaps the neighbourhood of the Black Sea; and the learned historians of Sweden and Denmark, by the ingenious device of supposing that there were *three* Wodens or Odins at different periods, have contrived to reduce the adventures ascribed to him to a kind of consistent chronology. Woden must, however, be considered merely as a mythological creation; and though it is very probable that there is some authentic foundation for the historical character of the "Furious One,"\*—such being the meaning of his name,—yet it is quite impossible to analyse the elements of which it is composed.

*Thor*, the patron deity of *Thorsdag*, or Thursday, follows in the rank immediately after Odin. Thor, like the Roman Jove, to whom the same day was assigned, was worshipped as the Thunderer; his thunderbolt was a hammer, which he wielded with irresistible force; and many tales and fables are told of his achievements and battles against giants and demons.

*Freya* was the wife of Odin, and gave her name to *Freya-dæg*, or Friday. She was the Venus of the North.

Lastly came *Sæter*, from whom Saturday was named. He was represented as standing upon a fish, and he held a bucket in his hand, so that he appears to have been a water deity.

Besides the before-mentioned deities, many others received their share of honour. *Saxnôte*, the son of Odin,

\* *Wood* still means *wad* in the actual dialect of Scotland.

was venerated by the old Saxons of Germany, and probably by their kinsmen in Britain, almost as highly as Odin himself; and from him the Kings of Essex were descended. On the Continent, the Slavonians, who spread themselves into Europe out of Asia, at a later period than the Teutons, had possessed themselves of the shores of the Baltic, where the old Saxons dwelled. The Russians are Slavonians; but this great nation consisted of many tribes, and the wild people who advanced as far as the Elbe were also called *Slavo-Winidi*, *Vendi*, or Vandals. Their mythology had some affinity to the system which now prevails amongst the Hindoos. Their idols were often many-headed, and covered with symbols. The Slavonians or Vandals adopted some of the Teuton gods from their Saxon neighbours: the latter equally borrowed from the Slavonians; and Sæter appears to have been one of these foreign deities.

delusions, the Teutonic nations retained some faint reminiscences of the truths revealed or shadowed to the Patriarchs. Possibly the week of seven days, as used by them, may be considered as one of these vestiges. They had a very firm conviction that the soul did not perish with the body. Of their conception of the essence of the Divine Being, the Anglo-Saxon language affords a singular testimony, for the name of *God* signifies *Good*. He was goodness itself, and the author of all goodness. Yet the idea of denoting the Deity by a term equivalent to abstract and absolute perfection, striking as it may appear, is perhaps less remarkable than the fact, that the word *Man*, which they used, as we do, to designate a human being, also signified *Wickedness*; showing how well they were aware that our fallen nature had become identified with sin and corruption. They held the doctrine, that this visible world was to be judged and destroyed, preparatory to a new and happier state of being. Though wild, and ferocious towards their enemies, they were less corrupted than the more polished Greeks and Romans. They were faithful, chaste, and honest—turning towards the light, and seeking amendment. The ground was good; and when the sower cast the seed, it brought forth an abundant harvest.

Whilst the Jutes, the Angles, and the Saxons were establishing their temporal dominion in Britain, the means of imparting to them the saving truths of the Gospel were preparing by the intervention of Gregory, who then held the station of Bishop or Patriarch, or, as his office is now more usually termed, of *Pope* of Rome.

The possession of the Roman Bishopric gave great rank and pre-eminence to the Prelate by whom this dignity was enjoyed. After the Romans, and the

nations constituting the Roman empire, had been converted to Christianity, it appeared expedient, that, when the Bishops of the different cities and provinces were assembled for the purpose of deliberating on the rule and government of the church, certain Prelates amongst them should be appointed to preside and keep order in these councils of the Clergy. And this duty was assigned to the Bishops, sometimes called Patriarchs, whose chairs or "*Cathedra*" were placed in the mother, or principal churches of the most important dioceses; for this latter term, which is now exclusively applied to ecclesiastical divisions, was used according to the imperial nomenclature—as I have before observed—to denote one of the classes of the temporal governments into which the empire was divided. The first, or Primate, of the Cathedral Bishops, was the Patriarch of Rome, who was complimented with an honorary precedence over other Bishops, because Rome was anciently



The Church of Rome perverted many human institutions into articles of faith ; and the pre-eminence assigned to the "Chair of St. Peter," unconnected as it was with any thing except the temporal government of the empire, became the origin and source of the vast dominion which the Popes afterwards assumed over the other churches of the Christian world.

Pope Gregory had become much interested in the welfare of the Anglo-Saxons, in consequence of an incident which happened to him at an earlier period of his life. It chanced that he passed through the market at Rome (about A.D. 588), where certain dealers had just arrived from foreign parts with various kinds of merchandise. Amongst other articles, there were slaves for sale, like cattle. This wicked traffic had existed from time immemorial ; and though Christianity had alleviated the lot of the slave, it had not succeeded in breaking his bonds. Gregory, therefore, could only pity the captives ; and he was particularly interested by the appearance of some poor little lads, who stood trembling in the expectation of being consigned to a new master. They were beautiful children, with ruddy cheeks and blue eyes, and their fine yellow tresses flowing in long curls upon their shoulders. Long hair, in those days, was a token of dignified birth. Only kings and nobles were accustomed to allow of its growth : persons of an inferior or servile class were closely shorn. Gregory must, therefore, have felt an additional motive for compassion, since he perceived that these children had sustained some great reverse of fortune—and their sufferings must be comparatively much more poignant than if they had been accustomed to privation and labour. The father of the boys had probably been killed in war ; and the children,

brought up in ease and comfort, were now exposed to hopeless captivity, passing from the tender care of their parents to the power of a merciless task-master in a strange land.

"To what nation do these poor boys belong?" was the question which Gregory asked of the dealer. "They are Angles, Father." "Well may they be so called, for they are as comely as angels; and would that, like angels, they might become cherubim in Heaven! But from which of the many provinces of Britain do they come?" "From *Deira*, Father." "Indeed," continued Gregory, speaking in Latin, "*De ira Dei liberandi sunt*"—From the wrath of God they are to be delivered. And when, on asking the name of their king, he was told it was Ella, or Alla, he added, that *Allelujah*—praise ye the Lord—ought to be sung in his dominions.

This conversation may appear trifling; but it was destined to produce the most important effects. The

caused a deserted church, built by the Romans in the neighbourhood of Canterbury, to be repaired and fitted up for divine service. Ethelbert, therefore, was not altogether unacquainted with the character and functions of Augustine and his forty companions, who, when they had landed in the Isle of Thanet, sent a messenger to him, soliciting an interview. Still he had a strange opinion that they might be magicians; and, by a still stranger idea, he fancied they were less likely to be able to hurt him by their enchantments, if he received them in the open air.

Augustine and his companions proceeded to the appointed place, and advanced towards the king, chanting the Litany, and praying earnestly for the Divine blessing and protection.\* Ethelbert did not at first yield much attention to the Missionaries. He excused himself from attending to their exhortations; but he received the Priests with kindness, and allowed them free liberty to preach to the people. Ethelbert himself soon became a listener and a convert; and within a short period, all the inhabitants of Kent were convinced of their folly in worshipping Thor and Woden, the idols of their ancestors.

So earnestly indeed did the men of Kent listen to

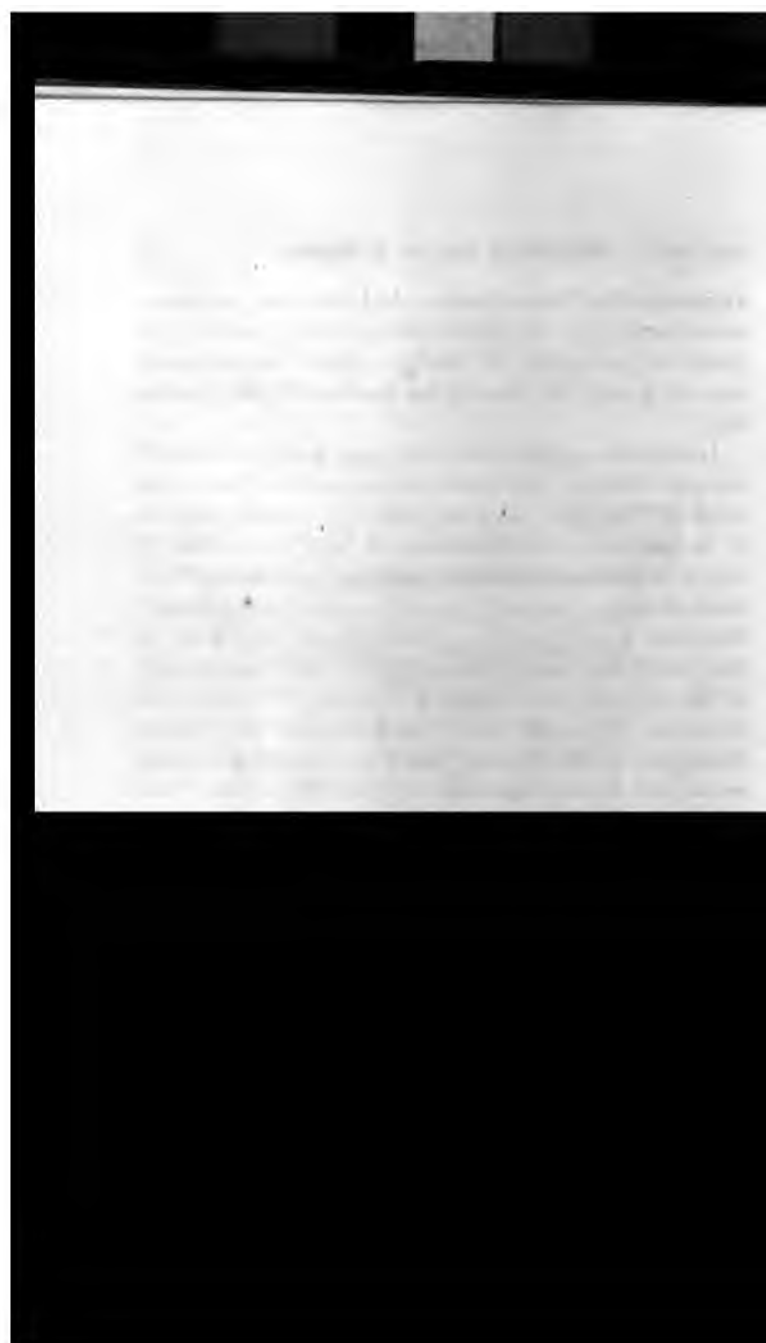
\* "For ever hallowed be this morning fair,  
Blest be the unconscious shore on which ye tread,  
And blest the Silver Cross, which ye, instead  
Of martial banner, in procession bear;  
The Cross preceding Him who floats in air,  
The pictured Saviour!—By Augustine led,  
They come—and onward travel without dread,  
Chanting in barbarous ears a tuneful prayer,  
Sung for themselves, and those whom they would free!  
Rich conquest waits them:—The tempestuous sea  
Of ignorance, that ran so rough and high,  
And heeded not the voice of clashing swords,  
These good men humble by a few bare words,  
And calm with fear of God's divinity."—WORDSWORTH.

Augustine, that upwards of ten thousand of them were baptized on one Christmas-day. And we have yet a friendly and confidential letter, addressed by Pope Gregory to Eulogius, his brother Patriarch of Alexandria, containing an account of the joyful success attending the missionaries who had laboured amongst the English, "in the most remote parts of the world." He speaks nearly in the same tone which we should now adopt, if relating the fruits of a mission in Polynesia.

Ethelbert was extremely anxious to afford to Augustine and his companions the means of performing divine worship with decency and solemnity; and he surrendered to them his own palace, that they might live therein, and erect a church adjoining: at the same time, he bestowed many ample possessions for the maintenance of the priests who were to become its ministers. This church is now the Cathedral of Canterbury. The



Capital of a Column in the Crypt of Canterbury Cathedral. Page 80.



eminent in the Roman times. And the great confusion consequent upon the Saxon conquest had scarcely injured the prosperity of London, which has continued increasing from the time of the Romans till the present day.

London was quite unlike the great metropolis which we now inhabit. Its extent was confined to what is now termed "the city," then surrounded by a wall, built, as it is supposed, about the age of Constantine, and of which a few fragments are existing. All around was open country. Towards the north-east a deep marsh,—the name is yet preserved in Moorfields,—extended to the foot of the Roman ramparts. On the western side of the city, and at the distance of nearly two miles, the branches of a small river which fell into the Thames formed an island, so overgrown with thickets and brush-wood, that the Saxons called it "*Thorney*," or the "*Isle of Thorns*." The river surrounding Thorney crept sullenly along the plashy soil; and the spot was so wild and desolate, that it is described as a fearful and terrible place, which no one could approach after night-fall without great danger. In this island there had been an ancient Roman temple, consecrated to Apollo. And Sebert, perhaps on account of the seclusion which Thorney afforded, resolved to build a church on the site, and he dedicated the fabric to St. Peter the Apostle. This Church is now Westminster Abbey; the busy city of Westminster is old Thorney Island, that seat of desolation; and the bones of Sebert yet rest in the structure which he founded. Another great church was built by Sebert, in the city of London, upon the ruins of the heathen temple of Diana (A.D. 604). This church is now St. Paul's Cathedral; and Mellitus being appointed the

first Bishop by Ethelbert and Sebert, the succession has continued to the present day.

During the lifetime of Augustine, the Anglo-Saxons to the north of the Humber continued strangers to Christianity. Their conversion took place under the reign of Edwin, who, after many vicissitudes of fortune, attained the supreme dignity, and became the Bretwalda or Emperor amongst the Kings of the island of Britain.

Edwin had married Ethelburgha, the daughter of Ethelbert; and at the request of Eadbert, her brother—who succeeded to the kingdom of Kent, upon the death of Ethelbert—he had permitted Paulinus, a missionary despatched by Justus, Archbishop of Canterbury, to enter his dominions. Paulinus was received with courtesy, and his conduct continued to command the respect which, at first, had been yielded to his station. Instead of injudiciously urging the object of his mission,



peared in the greatest danger. The prayers of Paulinus were offered for the queen and her babe: they both recovered; and twelve of the royal household, as well as the infant, were baptized by Edwin's permission and request.

Edwin himself still hesitated: he was about to engage in war with Cwichelm, for the purpose of punishing his treachery. He asked Paulinus for a sign, and declared, that, should he succeed against his enemies, he would adopt the Christian faith.

As soon as Edwin recovered from his wounds, he collected his forces, marched against the men of Wessex, and inflicted a signal punishment upon all who had conspired against him. On his return, he performed his vow in part: he abjured idolatry; no longer did he sacrifice to the false gods whom he had adored; and he anxiously laboured to put himself in the right way. Much of his time he passed in discussion with Paulinus, and also with his counsellors and nobles, but more in communing with his own heart, in solitude, in reflection, and in prayer.

Edwin was one day alone in his chamber (A.D. 627), being in that state of imperfect conviction, when the feelings of religion, alloyed by human doubts, impart more distress than comfort to the soul,—Paulinus suddenly entered, placed his hand upon Edwin's head, and announced a great deliverance from his enemies. The appearance of Paulinus, his attitude, and the intelligence which he thus communicated, corresponded with a foreboding or presentiment which Edwin had received, probably by a dream, when in exile at the court of Redwald, King of the East Angles; and Paulinus, availing himself of the impression thus created,

earnestly exhorted Edwin to acknowledge that Power by whom he had been protected and rescued from temporal danger. Edwin now began to yield the assent which he had so long delayed; and he declared unto Paulinus, that he would receive the sacrament of baptism, provided the wise law-givers of his kingdom would sanction his conversion, and also adopt Christianity.

Edwin had even yet only a wavering faith: humanly speaking, however, his conduct was palliated by the circumstances in which he was placed. The Kings of the Anglo-Saxons did not possess a despotic authority. They were forced to act by the advice of their nobles, many of whom were Sovereigns in their territories, though the vassals of the King; and if the Northumbrian chieftains had continued contumaciously averse to Christianity, Edwin would not only have been unable to

declaring, that if any better doctrine could be taught to him, he would adopt it without hesitation or delay.

Then spake another of the nobles, who, addressing himself to Edwin, compared the present life of man to the flight of a swallow : whence it comes we know not, nor whither it proceeds : our human existence is a gleam in the midst of darkness. "We know nothing of our origin," said he, "nothing of our end ; and if this new doctrine can teach us anything certain of our destiny, well is it worth that we should follow its law."\*

All the other nobles and counsellors delivered opinions to the same effect : not a dissentient voice was heard ; and Coifi, the High Priest, proposed that the heathen places of worship should be destroyed, or burnt with fire. But who is to execute this task ? The High Priest answers, that he himself will set the example of destroying the pristine objects of idolatry.

From the tone in which the question was put and answered, it is probable that some danger was apprehended from the anger of the people, and Coifi began his work in such a manner, as to show the most complete abandonment of the heathen law. According to the

\* I cannot deny to myself and my readers the pleasure of inserting the lines by which Wordsworth has rendered the text of Bede :—

"Man's life is like a sparrow, mighty King,  
That, stealing in, while by the fire you sit  
Housed with rejoicing friends, is seen to flit  
Safe from the storm, in comfort tarrying.  
Here did it enter—there, on hasty wing  
Flies out, and passes on from cold to cold ;  
But whence it came we know not, nor behold  
Whither it goes. E'en such that transient thing  
The human soul ; not utterly unknown  
While in the body lodged, her warm abode—  
But from what world she came, what woe or weal  
On her departure waits, no tongue hath shewn :  
This mystery if the stranger can reveal,  
His be a welcome cordially bestowed !"

ritual of Deira, a priest could not bear a weapon, or ride on a horse. Coifi girt himself with a sword, and grasped a lance in his hand, and mounting one of the royal steeds, he galloped to the temple of "Godmundingham."

This place of worship appears to have been encircled by several concentric enclosures, like the morais of Polynesia, and as soon as Coifi came within reach of the fane, he hurled his spear against its walls. When the people first saw him sally forth, they thought some sudden insanity had seized him. How much more must they have been astonished at this act! Yet no opposition was offered; within a very short space of time, the fabric was levelled to the ground; and after the lapse of so many centuries, its name, but slightly altered,\* continues to attest the truth of the history.

Baptism was then performed by immersion, and so general and so fervent was the zeal of the Northumbrians, that Paulinus was employed during thirty-six successive

now expect the Sabbath of the Lord, as a day of holiness and of repose. So strictly did the temporal laws protect the observance of the seventh day, the right and privilege of the poor, that the master who compelled his slave to work on the Sunday, was deprived of the means of abusing his power,—the slave obtained his freedom.

A tenth part of the produce of the land was set apart for the maintenance of the clergy, and the support of the destitute. Charity, when resulting from the unaided impulses of humanity, has no permanence. Bestowed merely to relieve ourselves from the painful sight of misery, the virtue blesses neither the giver nor the receiver. But, proceeding from the love of God, it is steady and uniform in its operation, not wayward, not lukewarm, not affected by starts and fancies, and ministering to more than the bodily wants of those who are in need.

Paupers, such as we now see, then rarely existed. Bad as it was, the system of slavery had given a house and a home to the great mass of the lowest orders. And the laws, which placed the middling classes under the protection, and at the same time under the control of the more powerful, prevented all such as really belonged to society, from experiencing any severe privations in those years when the people were not visited by any particular misfortunes. But mankind were then subjected to many calamities, which have been moderated in our times. If crops failed, and the earth did not bring forth her fruit, vessels arrived not from distant parts, laden with corn. Hunger wasted the land. Sickness and pestilence followed, and thinned the remnant who had been left. Families were broken up, and the survivors became helpless outcasts; for the people

ritual of the Church, as was  
on a horse, to supply their  
a lance in the greater miseries.  
he galloped, humanity constantly

This plan, by this enduring spring  
by any means in affording relief;—to  
ness, the hungry,—to visit the sick  
he had departed.

first, saw, in the plain letter of  
and the rude and savage  
book of their forefathers; and religion  
of improving the whole fabric of  
to their piety, the clergy were  
of the learning of the age. All the  
distinguishes civilization from savage  
to them. Admitted into the supreme

To the successors of the Anglo-Saxon prelates, we mainly owe the preservation of the forms and spirit of a free government, defended, not by force, but by law; and the altar may be considered as the corner-stone of the ancient constitution of the realm.

## Chapter IV.

*Royal dignity not existing amongst the Saxons and Jutes before their arrival in Britain—Kings—Royal authority amongst the Barbarians, how deduced from the Roman authority—Clovis—Bretwaldas or Emperors of Britain—Ella—Ceawlin—Ethelbert—Redwald—Edwin—Oswald—Oswio—Subjugation of the smaller States—Rise of the Kingdom of Mercia—Ethelbald—Offa—His Conquests of the Britons—Decline of Mercia, and Rise of Wessex—Egbert—His early adventures—Obtains the dignity of Bretwalda.*

If by the royal dignity we are to understand a permanent authority, enabling the Sovereign to give laws to his subjects in time of peace, to command them to follow him in time of war, and to impose taxes or tributes upon the nation at all times, such an authority



leaders of the nation. Collectively as a caste, and individually over their own immediate followers and retainers, they possessed great dominion and influence; but there was no political power of any wide extent, vested in any one individual, excepting during hostilities. A chieftain was then elected to lead the nation, but his rule expired with the urgency which had given it birth, and all the Aldermen were alike again. Such was the government of the "*old Saxons*;" but amongst others of the Teutonic nations, the authority of the chieftains had greatly extended. The Romans not unfrequently bestowed the title of "Rex" upon the leaders who had submitted to them, and who were by no means unwilling to purchase an increased authority over their subjects, by compromising their own political independence. Instances of this practice are found as early as the time of Julius Cæsar, and they afford a curious exemplification of the course pursued by the Romans in the days of their strength. When the empire decayed, grants of similar titles were the result of the weakness of the imperial power. Clovis may be our example. He was the conqueror of the Gauls; he had come in by right of the sword; and yet he was happy to receive the consular diploma and the purple robe from Anastasius, the Emperor of the East; and, invested with the imperial insignia, he rode in state, scattering gold and silver as he paced on his steed, whilst he was hailed as Augustus by the surrounding multitude. Here was policy on both sides;—Anastasius, by conferring such dignities upon Clovis, kept himself in the position of a superior; and Clovis, by accepting his dignity from Anastasius, not only obtained a firm hold upon his conquered subjects, the Romanized inhabitants of Gaul, but laid the founda-

ritual

on a

a land

he ge

The

by se

nesin

he h

first

sanit

been

offere

was

many

to att

Be

gene

that



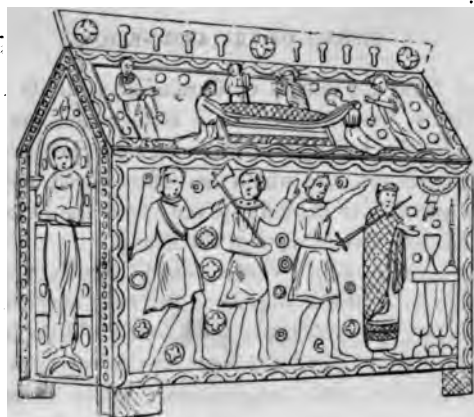
1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30  
31  
32  
33  
34  
35  
36  
37  
38  
39  
40  
41  
42  
43  
44  
45  
46  
47  
48  
49  
50  
51  
52  
53  
54  
55  
56  
57  
58  
59  
60  
61  
62  
63  
64  
65  
66  
67  
68  
69  
70  
71  
72  
73  
74  
75  
76  
77  
78  
79  
80  
81  
82  
83  
84  
85  
86  
87  
88  
89  
90  
91  
92  
93  
94  
95  
96  
97  
98  
99  
100

of  
or  
ach  
sts.  
one  
led in  
as; yet  
were not  
do.  
of King;  
r of Britain,  
ings, as each

of Bretwalda,  
sequence of his  
ved by inspection  
and the Jutes had  
and it would have  
founded so wide a  
ver this narrow angle  
lently assumed in imi-  
authority, whether as  
emperors or the British  
h a supremacy is wholly  
ernment existing amongst  
e to Britain. It was exer-  
Roman style and splendour  
coin of the Bretwalda, rudely

copied from the medal of Carausius, exhibits the wolf and twins, the ensigns of old Rome; and the Roman ensign, borne before him, demonstrated the rank which he had claimed, and which he endeavoured, with more or less success, to extend, not only over the Britons, but over all the other nations of the island.

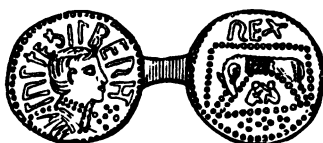
Ella,—Ceawlin of Wessex,—and Ethelbert of Kent, successively held this dignity. Redwald of East Anglia obtained it; but whether in the lifetime of Ethelbert (A.D. 477 to 616), or after his decease is somewhat uncertain. I incline to the latter supposition. From Redwald, the empire passed to Edwin of Northumbria. His authority extended over every part of Britain which was inhabited either by the Cymri, or by the English and Saxon natives (A.D. 617-633). The Menavian islands, or Man and Anglesea, were equally subjected to his power; and the name by which we denote the latter, meaning the "island of the English," is thought to have been derived



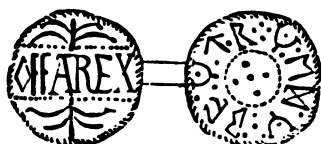
Shrine of Ethelbert, King of the East Saxons. Page 64.

ICOTVNO  
UPGCOMI

Inscription on the Shrine. Page 64.



Coin of the Bretwalda Ethelbert. Page 64.



Silver Penny of Ofa, King of Mercia. Page 72.



Britain acknowledged him as "Emperor;" and the title was given to him in such a manner as to shew that it was equivalent to that of Bretwalda. He ruled supreme over all the nations and provinces of the island, divided, according to the expression of Bede, into four nations: the Angles, the Picts, the Cymri, and the Scots. Oswald's virtues, perhaps, assisted in enabling him to acquire this dominion. Humble and lowly-minded, full of piety and active charity, the qualities which caused him to be canonized after his death, obtained the love and veneration of his subjects when living; and the epithet of "Bounteous-hand," bestowed upon him by the Britons, is a singular testimony of respect shewn to a "Sassenagh" sovereign.

Oswald, like Edwin, fell in battle with the Mercians (A.D. 642); and the miracles supposed to be worked in the field of "Maserfelth,"\* were accepted as testimonies of the sanctity ascribed to the Northumbrian king. Oswio, the brother of Oswald, after some interval—for his authority over the Northumbrian kingdoms was disturbed and contested even by his own son—obtained the dignity of Bretwalda, like his predecessor; and the Picts and Scots, as well as the other natives of Britain, acknowledged his supremacy.

I have said that the Bretwaldas are to be considered as the successors of the Roman Emperors, or *Tyrants*. But the remark must be extended; and we may affirm, that when and so soon as the royal authority became developed amongst any of the barbarians who settled on Roman ground, all their kings took upon themselves, as far as they could, to govern according to the spirit of the Roman policy, and agreeably to the maxims prevail-

\* Perhaps Oswestry.

ing in the decline of the empire, and declared in the imperial law. At the same time, this copy of the Roman majesty was very rude and inartificial. The edifice was the handiwork of unskilful artists working by eye, and in coarse materials. The "*Witan*" (sages), and "*Rædgifa*" (givers of counsel), of the Anglo-Saxon and other of the barbaric kingdoms, used the codes and codicils and rescripts of the Emperors, even as their church architects attempted to imitate the models afforded by the sacred structures of imperial Rome. Yet, though the column be disproportioned, and the capital rude, and the moulding misshapen, we must acknowledge that the cathedral of Charlemagne would never have assumed its characteristic form, if the architect had not sought a prototype in the Basilica of Constantine.

This assumption of power was not unchecked or



as their birthright and best privilege. Taking all these things together, we must consider the practical government of the State as resulting from two opposite principles, often discordant, and sometimes entirely hostile to each other—a Roman law which the king endeavoured to introduce into the administration of the state—and a Germanic law, upon which that Roman law was imposed; and by adverting to these circumstances, many of the problems of history may be solved. Thus, in the kingdom of the Franks, the “Comites” and “Duces,” (such being the titles by which the subordinate chieftains were distinguished), appear sometimes as hereditary, and sometimes as deriving their authority from the sovereign. Now, if it be assumed that the sovereign, in continuation of the Roman policy, delegated his power to local governors—but that these local governors were usually the old heads or rulers of the subordinate nations or tribes, this contradiction will disappear. By accepting the royal diploma or commission, the *Senior* accumulated the royal jurisdiction upon his own, and they became inseparably blended when, in process of time, the distinction between his rights as a Teutonic chieftain, and his duties as the king’s officer were neglected or forgotten. This may be illustrated by a familiar comparison:—supposing the Lord-lieutenancy of Merionethshire had been invariably granted, since the reign of Henry VIII., to the Wynns—from father to son; and that when the male line ceased, the office was equally continued in the female line: that we had no regular record or register relating to such appointments; and that the country was in great turbulence and warfare:—under these circumstances, the Wynns and the people of Merionethshire

might very naturally be induced to suppose, that all the powers of the lieutenancy were inherent in the descendant of Owen Gwynedd, and that they belonged to him by inheritance, like his estates, independently of the will of the King of England.

No monarch of Northumbria, after Oswio, possessed the title of Bretwalda; and, in the course of his reign, he sustained a great loss of dominion. He slew Penda and subdued Mercia (A.D. 655); and, without doubt, declared in his manifestoes that it was a just war, which he had undertaken for the purpose of reducing the ancient dependency of his Northumbrian crown. But the conquest profited not to Oswio. The Mercian nobles or Ealdormen submitted with an ill will (A.D. 656): they concealed Wulfere, Penda's son; and in less than a year, Wulfere was king of the Mercians and Middle Angles—for the two nations continued distinct. Wulfere extended his conquests into Wesssex, and the title

effort for the purpose of relieving themselves from a yoke which had become intolerable. At Burford, the two sovereigns met in battle. Ethelbald's army consisted of his own people, the Mercians, the men of Kent, the East Saxons, and the East Angles (A.D. 752). Cuthred's troops were led on by Ethelhun,—“the presumptuous Alderman,” as he is called in the Chronicles—bearing the Golden Dragon, the ensign of Wessex. Ethelhun had recently been at war with his lord, Cuthred; but Cuthred defeated him, and they were good friends again; and Ethelhun was strenuous in his sovereign's cause. The conflict was extremely obstinate and bloody, but at length Ethelhun and Ethelbald engaged in single combat. Hitherto, Ethelbald had found no equal in prowess; but now his strength failed him, and he betook himself to shameful flight: not long afterwards he was slain by treachery, and his dominion passed to Beorred the Tyrant, who usurped his throne (A.D. 757).

Beorred fully deserved the epithet of Tyrant, taken in its worst sense. He appears to have been one of the many Aldermen whose dominions were united beneath the Mercian crown. He governed the people according to his will, and not according to law. And when his intrusive government had become so oppressive, that the Mercians could bear it no longer, the whole people, gentle and simple, rose as one man; and, expelling Beorred, they elected or recognized Offa as their king. Offa was a “Patrician” of the “right royal line” of Mercia, being descended from Wibba, the son of Creoda; but he had been compelled to take refuge with the King of Hwiccas, who probably was his kinsman. The historical romances of the Anglo-Saxons celebrated two monarchs of the name of Offa. The first was the son of

*Wahrmund* or *True-mouth*, being the name which the Franks spell as "*Pharamond*." *Wahrmund* and *Offa* really do appear in the genealogies of the kings of Mercia. And the tales of the Northmen repeat the same fables concerning *Varmund Vitri*, or the *Wise*, and *Olaf*, or *Uffa Látilate*, or the *Meek*, which had become consecrated by the lays of the Scandinavian Scalds. *Offa* the Second is fabled to have been miraculously restored from deformity and debility, to symmetry and vigour; and his marriage with the fair but profligate *Druda* is accompanied by all the machinery of romance. These fictitious *Offas* must not be confounded with the true one; and it is difficult to discover any slender vestiges of truth which may exist amongst these fables.

*Offa's* right to the crown of Mercia was joyfully acknowledged. Clergy and laity crowned him as king, and he speedily extended his power, far beyond the

up a vast entrenchment, reaching from the neighbourhood of Chester to the Wye. "Clawdh Offa," or Offa's Dyke, it is called by the Welshmen to the present day. The Britons, however, did not submit tamely to the invader (A.D. 792). Issuing from their mountain fastnesses, they continually, though unavailingly, attacked the English Mercians, who, on their part, retaliated by ravaging the British territory. During one of these incursions, a memorable battle took place at Rhuddlan. Caradoc, King of Gwynedd, or North Wales, was slain, together with the flower of the British youth and nobility. The British bards mourned this defeat by composing a lament, entitled, "*Morva Rhuddlan*:" the strain is often played upon the harp in Wales: and we may yet listen to the rich and plaintive melody, which, to us Saxons, commemorates the victory of the Mercian Offa.

Upon the conquests of Offa and his predecessor it is necessary to make one important observation, namely, that the political subjugation of Powys and the adjoining countries did not necessarily lead to the total expulsion of the British tribes. English colonists were partially introduced; but the British peasantry continued to dwell upon the soil, though the domain was transferred to other lords; and so numerous were they, that the country continued British in appearance even until the reign of King John, when, in common language, Hereford was still considered to be in Wales. In fact, the whole of this border was held and peopled nearly as we see Monmouthshire at the present day. The mass of the people are *Cymri*, speak their ancient British language, and continue to give the ancient denomination of *Gwent* to the lands on which they dwell. But the higher orders, the gentry and the clergy and the magistrates, are almost

wholly of English race; and the county is an integral part of the realm of England. Very many of the territories ruled by the Anglo-Saxons had thus a double aspect; Anglo-Saxon, if you considered them as a state; British, if you viewed the populacy by which they were filled: and by recollecting this circumstance, we may reconcile and explain many seeming anomalies and contradictions in our history.

The results of these conflicts seem to have confirmed the authority of Offa over the Britons of Cambria, who became the vassals of his crown. Offa lived to accomplish the subjugation of all the Anglo-Saxon states south of the Humber. Kent was conquered in open battle (A.D. 775-776). The West Saxons, after losing part of their territories, submitted by compromise. The East Saxons were subdued; and the great and opulent city of London, with the "Pagus" of Middlesex, had been annexed to Mercia, perhaps by the voluntary submission

appearance and character of the damsels to their master. The eldest, they might say, was distinguished by her beauty, the second by her wit, but the youngest by her modesty and discretion. Ethelbyrht thought it best to judge with his own eyes, though caution ought to have suggested, that some harm might ensue to him. The once-powerful kingdom of East Anglia had rapidly declined: its history is merely a blank in our annals. Even the names of the greater number of its monarchs are lost; and we can only surmise, that from the death of Redwald, it had usually submitted to the reigning Bretwalda. Offa asserted his supremacy, and many dissensions had arisen between him and Ethelbyrht. But the latter relied upon the honour of a king; and he proceeded without doubt or hesitation to the palace of his intended father-in-law.

Cwendritha, the queen of Offa, was cruel and crafty. "You have your old enemy in your power," quoth she to Offa; "him whose kingdom you have so long coveted." The Mercian, easily yielding to advice which agreed with his wishes, caused the young and valiant Ethelbyrht to be beheaded, and then despatching a powerful army against the East Angles, he took possession of the country. Neither the "Giant's dyke," nor the rivers and waters of their frontier, could enable them to withstand their enemy.

An Anglo-Saxon king was not always certain that his son would succeed him in his dominions. The royal authority was vested in the royal families; but no individual of such family had any determinate or absolute right. The new king was generally designated by the assent of the nation; and if the son of the late king was not able to exercise the functions of royalty, the

brother of the deceased monarch, or even some more remote relation, was called to the throne. Such a mode of succession was not unwisely adapted to the exigencies of the age. An Anglo-Saxon king, in the earlier times, was the chief-justice or magistrate of his people in time of peace. He was also their commander-in-chief, both by land and sea, in time of war; and ill would the affairs of the nation have been sped, had they been entrusted to an infant mind or an infant hand. In cases, however, where the heir was approaching to mature age, the deviation from lineal succession, though often practised, was less expedient; nor could it be pleasing to a father to anticipate the exclusion of his son, from the dignity which he himself had possessed.

Offa, therefore, adopted a scheme, not hitherto employed in England, though many examples had been found in foreign nations (A.D. 785). He summoned a great council; and with the assent and concurrence of



ments, faintly raised above the grass, just enable us to trace the site of the royal residence. But the medals coined by Offa, and which in beauty and workmanship excel those of any other Saxon monarch, afford a proof of the cultivation of those arts whose progress is favoured by opulence and tranquillity. The prosperity of Mercia was, however, of very short duration. The welfare of the country was not founded upon right government and justice. It was a tower built upon the sand; and after the death of Offa (A.D. 795), upon whose personal character the vigour of the government, during his long reign of forty years, had principally depended, the splendour of Mercia declined, and the fortunes of its rival, Wessex, prevailed.

Where lineal succession, that is to say, the rule that the son of a king takes the dignity which had been held by his father, is fully established, it has the good effect of preventing most of those disputes which give rise to civil wars. It is very easy to tell who is the eldest son of the late king: no doubt can arise about that fact; but it is not so easy to determine who is the bravest or the wisest candidate or competitor, because the electors, in such a case, will ascribe all the requisite qualifications to that prince from whom they expect the greatest favours. Hence all persons are now agreed that, if you have a king, it is best that the dignity should be inheritable according to primogeniture; that the eldest son should take the crown in preference to the younger brothers, and also in preference to his uncles. For, by this means, all the disputes are avoided, and if the heir be deficient in wisdom, he may perhaps be provided with good ministers, by whose advice he can be guided.

As I have before observed, this rule of lineal succes-

...the Anglo-Saxon Church...  
...occasionally...  
...royal family. Properly...  
...the assembly of sages," or...  
...election or nomination;  
...usually cut by the...  
...the West Saxons, was...  
...was opposed...  
...a better...  
...and...  
...the divisions...  
...the adjoining...  
...and he dispatched...  
...that he...  
...the hand...  
...—  
...the real...

the cruelty and ambition of her father, Offa. Constantly did she labour to excite jealousy between the king and his subjects (A.D. 799-800). She became hateful to all, and she returned that hatred; and when she could not wreak her vengeance in any other manner, she had recourse to poison. Having prepared a mortal potion, which she intended for the bane of one of the noblemen who attended the court, it chanced that Beortric drank of the cup, and died. The crime could not be concealed; Eadburgha was degraded from her station, and banished; and the men of Wessex, not contented with the punishment inflicted upon the criminal, determined to abolish the rank which she had possessed; they decreed, that thenceforward the consort of the king should neither be called queen, nor sit on the throne, nor be in any wise associated to the royal dignity. Eadburgha fled to France, disgraced, but wealthy, for she had carried off great store of gold. In that country she sank into the most abandoned profligacy: miserable poverty followed. From France she wandered to Italy. During the last years of her life, she was a common beggar in the streets of Pavia. Thus ended the line of Offa.

Beortric having perished by the wickedness of his queen, as I have before described, the vacant throne was filled by Egbert, who returned from France, and succeeded without any domestic opposition (A.D. 800); and having concluded a peace with the Mercians who had taken up arms against him, he had full leisure to establish himself in his kingdom. The first nine years of his reign are nearly a void in all the authentic chronicles; but in those narratives which are less trustworthy, the vacant space is partly filled up by the account of a parliament held at Winchester, in which Egbert decreed,

that South Britain should take the name of "England." It is tolerably clear, that, in consequence of the greater preponderance of Angles, the nations whom we usually term Anglo-Saxons were often called English; but our country was not denominated England till a much later period, and the parliament of Egbert is a pure fable.

According to the usual course of policy amongst the Anglo-Saxons, Egbert pursued the Britons with fierce hostility; yet I believe that it was not for the purpose of expelling them from the country, but rather to reduce them into a state of tributary subjection. The Britons of the West opposed a strenuous, but unavailing resistance (A.D. 809 to 814). Great was the slaughter on both sides; but Egbert prevailed; he was equally successful against those who dwelt on the northern shore of the estuary of the Severn; and lastly, all, or the greater part of, modern Wales submitted to his authority (A.D. 783). We must now direct our attention to Kent,

Alchmund, then, was one of those kinglets, or *Roitelôts* as the French term them ; and, as I suppose (but recollect, that this is only my hypothesis), he had been appointed king in Kent by the power of Wessex. But before and during his time, there were many other kings of Kent, some of whose dominions were, perhaps, not more extensive than the "Lathes" into which the country is divided.\* This petty state was in great confusion ; and after the reign of Alchmund, one Eadbert, surnamed Pren or Prynne, obtained the kingdom. The ancestry of Eadbert is not known (A.D. 796-797) ; some people think that he was a priest or monk, who, having quitted his church or monastery, exchanged the clerical tonsure for a crown. The Mercians, as you have heard, had already been the conquerors of Kent ; and Cynewulf, the king of the Mercians, who had succeeded to Ecgfrith, the son of Offa, resolved to gain possession of the country, which he attacked with a powerful army. Eadbert Pren could not make any defence : the "Men of the Marsh" or Merscwara, supposed to be the inhabitants of the neighbourhood of Romney, betrayed him into the power of his enemies. Eadbert is accused of great tyranny ; but he was treated with a degree of cruelty which no tyranny could justify. The Merscwara put out his eyes, and struck off his hands ; and, thus blinded and maimed, the agonized captive was loaded with chains and fetters, and conducted into Mercia.

Cynewulf had erected a church or monastery at Winchcombe, and on the day when the fabric was consecrated, his heart inclined to mercy. Cynewulf manumitted the captive Eadbert before the altar, in the

\* Kent contained five Lathes, which were analogous to the Tithings in Yorkshire.

presence of the applauding multitude; but there his clemency terminated. He took the crown of Kent and placed it on his own head; and then he grasped the sceptre in his hand, and proclaimed himself to be king of the country, which was now subjected to the dominion of Mercia. Kent continued thus subjugated during several years, though the Mercians frequently appointed "under kings" or dependent sovereigns, who governed the land as vassals of the Mercian crown; the first sovereign of this description after the Mercian conquest, being Cuthred, the brother of Cynewulf, who received the country as an apanage.

Under the earlier Bretwaldas, the greater Anglo-Saxon powers had been pretty nearly balanced; but Northumbria, as I shall shortly have occasion to explain to you, was now in the last stage of weakness and disunion; and the kings of this country were entirely out of the



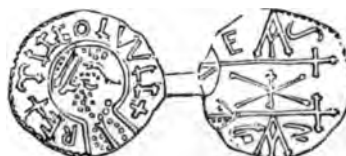
**Silver Penny of Ethelwulf. Page 80.**



**Anglo-Saxon Cup found at Halton (Lancashire)**



**Silver Coin of Egbert. Page 86.**



**Silver Penny of Ceolwulf, King of Mercia. Page 103.**





Thames, and the inhabitants of the country unanimously declared in favour of Egbert. Surrey, Sussex, and Essex followed the example of Kent. They all considered that Egbert was their rightful king by descent and blood, and that they had been wrongfully separated from the dominion of his ancestors; and I present this fact to you prominently, because it is one of those which show how zealously the old English or Anglo-Saxons were attached to the families of their sovereigns. Egbert, upon acquiring possession of Kent and the adjoining countries, acted according to the policy which I have before noticed. He granted these dominions to his son Ethelwulf as an apanage; the latter held them until his accession to his father's throne; and, thereupon, the apanage passed to Ethelwulf's son, Athelstane. The mode of descent, therefore, if the Danish invasions, of which I shall shortly speak, had not unsettled the kingdom, would have been nearly like that of the principality of Wales, which is held by the heir-apparent for the time being of the English crown.

These prosperous events were followed by another acquisition of power. The East Anglians, who after the murder of Ethelbyrht had become the subjects of Mercia, threw off this hateful supremacy; but Beornwulf, who had usurped the throne of Mercia, asserted his intention of regaining the authority, however unjust, which his predecessors had acquired (A.D. 821). Thus harassed, the king of the East Angles and his people placed themselves under the protection of Egbert, requesting his aid and protection against the Mercian power; in other words, they became his vassals (A.D. 823); and it is worthy of notice, that the chronicle expresses their submission in the terms employed in the official acts, by

which the subjects of the Carlovingian empire recognised the authority of their sovereign. Egbert most willingly accepted their homage, and promised to afford them that protection which their submission had earned, for in all such cases the obligation was reciprocal.

Beornwulf was a stout warrior. His name means "Bear-wolf," and I almost suspect that, as amongst the North American Indians, the appellations of the Anglo-Saxon chieftains were sometimes given to them in mature age, from the qualities which they possessed, or of which they wished to be thought the possessors. Beornwulf showed great pugnacity; and, collecting a powerful army, he invaded East Anglia (A.D. 825), denouncing vengeance against king and people; but they encountered him with equal obstinacy, and Beornwulf fell in the conflict. Iudica, who can be traced as an Alderman in Mercia, was raised to the throne; but he also was slain by the East Anglians. Upon the death of Iudica, the

and became his tributaries (A.D. 828-830). About the same time, Swithred, King of the East Saxons, was expelled by the conqueror. The Britons north of the Severn, in other words, occupying the territory of the modern Welsh, were utterly subdued; and Egbert became fully established in the state and honour of the eighth Bretwalda, or supreme Emperor of the Island of Britain.

## Chapter V.

*The Danish Invasions—Facilitated by the Dissensions of the Anglo-Saxon States—Regnor Lodbrok and his Sons—Martyrdom of Edmund, King of the East Angles—Ethelwulf—His Marriage with Judith—West Saxons Rebel against him—Cedes the best part of his Kingdom to his Son Ethelbald—Death of Ethelwulf—His four Sons become successively Kings of Wessex—Ethelbald—Ethelbert—Ethered—Alfred.*

THE victories of Egbert were facilitated by causes which ultimately brought disgrace and ruin upon the Anglo-Saxon name. Although the Anglo-Saxons were quite sensible, in theory, of the advantages resulting from good order and regular policy, the first element of

the celebrated orator, who, like Milton, failed as an historian, has repeated the same comparison; and it has been borrowed by many other writers of great eminence. With submission, however, they are in the wrong. A simile which may eke out a verse, or embellish and relieve a speech, may, nevertheless, be a very invalid argument; these distinguished writers were entirely deluded by the picture presented to their fancy. And the popularity which the comparison has attained—for it is in every body's mouth—has tended, in no small degree, to encourage an erroneous mode of investigating the truths of history.

Whether the kites or the crows gain the battle, may certainly be of little consequence to us, as an abstract question; but if we are employed in investigating the natural history of these birds, then it becomes very important to know how, and when, and for what reasons, they carry on their hostilities. Their pugnacity is a fact which elucidates their habits, and which must not be neglected by the enquirer. For, assuming that kites and crows do wage war amongst each other, according to Milton's supposition, the inference to be drawn is, that the nature of the genera to which kites and crows belong, differs most essentially from the genus of rooks, who are quietly directed in their course, without ever engaging against an enemy.

He who wishes to understand history, must learn to estimate the importance of facts and details, especially those relating to remote or obscure periods, not by their apparent value, but in proportion to the insight which they afford into the general character of society. The skirmish to which I have alluded, was probably an ordinary occurrence, exciting no attention at the time;

but such petty warfare could not have taken place, if the Anglo-Saxon monarchs had possessed that degree of supremacy over their people, which we now consider as an essential attribute of royal power. This loose and imperfect government accustomed the people to strife and dissension; and the Anglo-Saxon states were miserably divided by internal feuds.

The misfortunes sustained by the men of Kent had been greatly occasioned by their quarrels, during which the line of the *Æscingas* had become extinct. But the chief scene of strife was laid in Northumbria. As one faction or another prevailed, the kings, who were, in truth, only the puppets of these factions, were expelled or restored: hailed as monarchs, or slain as traitors and usurpers; and the greater part were of dubious lineage. Amongst a rude people, who, whether justly or not, considered the royal authority as appertaining to a

this misleading passion, as it is wrong in its origin. All the Anglo-Saxon states professed one faith, spoke one language, and the depression of any one kingdom ought, in truth, to have been considered as the misfortune of the whole community.

The Romans and Anglo-Saxons had successively prevailed over the Britons, principally by reason of their dissensions, which had prevented them from withstanding their common enemies. Alcuin, the friend of Charlemagne, in the epistles which he addressed to his English countrymen, exhorted them to bear in mind the example afforded them by the ancient annals of the island. From his cloister, he bade them turn to the pages of Gildas, and employ the history of the past in its best use, as a lesson for the present time. But no warning could prevail; and the conquerors, in their turn, were now about to become the victims of the same shortsighted passion and folly: they continued turning their spears against each other, unmindful of the foemen who were preparing to reduce them to the utmost misery.

The Scandinavian nations and their kindred tribes, who about this period were usually called Danes or Northmen, were never at peace. Like the piratical states of Barbary, they depended wholly upon war and plunder; but after the settlement of Northumbria by the Angles, all communication between Britain and "old England" seems to have ceased. During this period, it is probable that the Scandinavians and Jutes were much engaged in warfare with the Finns and other inhabitants of the north. Such civilization as they had once possessed was greatly impaired, and a more stern and savage character was imparted to their idolatry.

In the same year when Offa acquired the supremacy of

Wessex (A.D. 787), three strange vessels made the shore of Dorsetshire, and landed their crews near one of the "king's towns." Badohard, the Reeve, or Mayor of the town, quite unsuspecting of any danger, rode to meet the strangers, probably thinking that they were traders, and with the intent of claiming the customs due upon their merchandize. If such was his object, he received payment from the Danish battle-axe : his attendants shared the same fate, and fell before the invaders.

From this era, the Danes became the incessant and inveterate foes of Britain and its inhabitants, visiting every part of the island with fire and sword. They are always before us ; we always see the horizon reddened with flame, we always hear the tramp of war. It is certain that they must have recollected their kindred with the Anglo-Saxons ; but this circumstance rather heightened than mitigated their ferocity. They con-





Danish Warriors.

Page 84.



the chieftains by whom our island was colonised. This opinion is corroborated by the very strong traditional belief which has prevailed concerning the pertinacity of the Danes in keeping up the remembrance of their rights. In the thirteenth century, the French imagined that part of the dowry of the unfortunate princess Ingeburgha (who was married to Philip Augustus, and was most shamefully treated by him) consisted of the pretensions which Denmark possessed to the dominion of England. The peasantry of Ireland firmly believe, that when a Danish nobleman bestows his daughter in marriage, he always makes an ample Irish settlement upon her; giving her, in part of her fortune, or sometimes as the whole of it, a fine estate in the county Clare, or county Wexford, to which his family have been legally entitled ever since they were dispossessed, in the tenth century. And, but a very few years ago, a party of surveyors employed in measuring Lord Reay's country, in the shire of Sutherland, were mistaken by the highlanders for a detachment of the Host of Lochlin, about to reclaim their old inheritance. These traditional opinions are not to be engrafted into history as facts; but yet they are usually the recollections of facts, and not without their value in elucidating the transactions of remote periods, and in connecting and explaining the fragments of information which we possess.

During the last years of Egbert's reign, the Northmen or Danes had been continually gaining strength. Their attacks were principally directed towards the western districts, thickly peopled with discontented Britons. Gladly did the Britons or *Wilisc-men* of Devon join the invader (A.D. 832-833-835), by whose aid they hoped to be delivered from the empire of the sons of Cerdic, and



Sandwich. Athelstane, King of Kent, and Elchere, the Alderman, defeated the Danes and took many of their vessels, and the state of affairs seemed to promise a temporary security.

Ethelwulf, about this time, had four surviving sons, his children by his wife Osburgha, the daughter of the noble Oslac. Ethelbald, now the eldest, and who had assisted his father in defeating the Danes,—Ethelbert—Ethered—and Alfred. The latter was the best-beloved child of Ethelwulf; and for the purpose of securing the succession to him, he was sent to Rome, where Pope Leo anointed him with holy oil, and consecrated him as a king (A.D. 853-855). Ethelwulf also proceeded to Rome; and whilst he was on the continent he espoused Judith, the daughter of Charles the Bald, King of the Franks. The royal diadem was placed upon her head by Hincmar, Bishop of Rheims; and she was inaugurated and crowned as queen, with great solemnity.

Ethelwulf's journey was ill-timed. It is said that he was dull and stupid, and wanting in ability to govern and defend his people: and that, if he ever shewed wisdom, it was when acting under the advice of Alstane, Bishop of Sherborne, who had assisted him in making the conquest of Kent, and of Swithin, Bishop of Winchester, a great statesman in those days, but who is now only recollected as the patron of rainy weather. During Ethelwulf's absence, the discontent which prevailed against him assumed the shape of an organized revolt. The conspirators, headed by Ethelbald, the eldest son of Ethelwulf, who was already king of some apauage or dependant state, assembled in the forest of Selwood, and resolved to prevent Ethelwulf from ever returning to the government of Wessex. Bishop Alstane, Ealhere, Duke

of Somerset, and other powerful noblemen, had joined in the plot. Many, however, of the nobles of Wessex sided with the old king; and a most unnatural civil war between the father and son appeared to be impending.

Ethelwulf had alarmed the jealousy of Ethelbald by the coronation of Alfred, who was thus obvioually designated as his father's successor. Equally, or perhaps more offensive to the West Saxons, was the recognition of Judith as Queen. You will recollect, that, in consequence of the crimes of the wicked Eadburgha, the dignity of Queen had been altogether abolished; and the coronation of Judith, with great pomp and solemnity, was regarded as a violation of the constitution. It must also be observed, that Ethelwulf, in order to make way for Judith, had put away Osburgha, the mother of his children. This fact is not mentioned in express terms in our ancient historians; but Osburgha is noticed in a







the portion of Ethelbald, though with a nominal subjection to his father.

Ethelwulf survived these events about four years. Upon his death, Ethelbald immediately married his own step-mother, Judith (A.D. 857-860). This incestuous marriage caused great scandal; but nothing further is recorded concerning him.

He was succeeded by his brother, Ethelbert, who had already been in possession of the kingdom of Kent, with its dependencies (A.D. 860). Immediately upon his accession, the invasions of the Danes were renewed. They had been busily employed in Gaul. Paris was burnt, together with many of the principal cities of that country; and so extensive were their operations, that whilst some of their squadrons ascended the Scheld, others passed through the Straits of Gibraltar; and sailing up the Mediterranean, had visited the southern shores with their fury. And now their unsatiated thirst of rapine was again directed against unhappy Britain. Winchester, the ancient capital of Wessex, shared the fate of Paris. The city was burnt to the ground (A.D. 860). As the Danes were returning to their vessels, laden with spoil, they were attacked by the men of Hampshire and Berkshire, under the command of their respective Aldermen, Athelwulf and Osric, and some of the invading detachments were dispersed. The Saxons called this a victory; but such victories produced no more permanent effect than the fanning of your hand through a cloud of mosquitoes; they give way, and instantly they come together again, as numerous and as teasing as before.

Though the Danes had not yet acquired any dominion in Britain, they had occupied Thanet, where they fixed

their winter-quarters (A.D. 864-865); and this isle became a rallying point for their forces. The same spot on which the Jutes first established themselves against the Britons, was fated to become equally detrimental to their descendants. The men of Kent concluded, or, to speak more accurately, bought a treaty of peace. They paid a large sum to the pagans as the price of their forbearance. The Danes took the gold, but they calculated that they could earn more by war than by peace. They secretly and treacherously quitted their position, and fearfully ravaged the country, whose inhabitants relied upon the compact which they had concluded.

The death of Ethelbert and the accession of Ethered, at this calamitous period (A.D. 866), are events which appear scarcely discernible amidst the distress and turmoil of the war.

Halfdene, Hingwar, and Hubba, the sons of Regner Lodbrok, now descended on the coast of East Anglia,

henticity. His surname, "*Lodbrok*," was derived from the ingenious device which he employed for his protection when encountering a dragon, by whose death was to win the hand of the beautiful Thora. It is only necessary to observe,—the fact being familiarly known to the merest tyro in romance—that all dragons breathe fire and poison; and, in order to resist the venom of the beast, Regner, with as much ingenuity as "*More More Hall*," clad himself in garments of shaggy leather, of which that portion, which, if he had been a Highlander, he would *not* have worn, was so remarkable in its appearance, that the name of *Lodbrok*\* adhered to him during the remainder of his life. It would have been well if the raiment itself had covered him in the case of vipers; but it did not; and whilst the reptiles were "stinging" him, he composed his celebrated death-song, called "*Krakamal*," the foundation of his history; and this ode he sung whilst he was expiring.

Of such materials is the life of Regner composed; and our Danish historians, in order to reduce his adventures to due chronology, are obliged to have recourse to their usual theory of multiplication. *Torfæus* divides Regner Lodbrok into *two*. This will not suffice for *him*: he supposes there were *three* successive Regners, and *two* successive Ellas, by whom the three Lodbroks were killed. Some of our chronicles attribute the expedition to the revenge of a Northumbrian noble, one Uern Brocard, irritated to madness, like another Count Julian, by the affront which he had received from the king of Osbert, the King of Northumbria. And, according to a third narrative, Regner Lodbrok having been cast ashore in East Anglia, was slain by Beorn, the

\* *Vilosa femoralis*, as expounded by Saxo Grammaticus.

hunter of the king. But I must dismiss these tales, which I have quoted merely as specimens of the fables intermixed with our authentic history.

As soon as the Danes landed, the pirates were converted into an army of cavalry. They "horsed" themselves forthwith; and their wonderful activity and bodily energy rendered them as formidable by land as by sea. Upon the ample folds of the standard which floated at the head of their host, was depicted the Raven, the bird of Odin. The magic banner had been woven and worked by the daughters of Regner Lodbrok, in one noontide; and the Danes believed that their national ensign was endowed with prophetic powers. If victory was to follow, the raven stood erect and soaring before the warriors; but if a defeat was impending, the raven hung his head and drooped his wings.

Had the Northumbrians and the Mercians cordially concurred, at this crisis, with the West Saxons, their

Thus were the Northumbrians punished. Mercia now felt the scourge. The heathens crossed the frontier, and took the town of Nottingham. King Burhred and the Mercians implored the aid of Ethered and Alfred, who readily advanced to their assistance, but with little effect, for the Danes retained possession of the town. Henceforth, Nottingham was reckoned among those which were especially denominated the "Danish Burghs." The others were "*Northweorthig*," Leicester, Lincoln, Stamford, York, and Chester, forming a connected chain of strong positions, which equally commanded the English population of Mercia and of Northumbria. In these burghs there appears to have settled a large and effective population composed of the higher classes of the Danish warriors; and the name of "*Northweorthig*" was altered by them to the appellation of *Deorby*, or Derby, which the town or borough now bears.

Other similar changes of name took place. Streon-eshalch, the monastery of St. Hilda, acquired the name of Whitby: and it is probable that the greater part of the names of places in Yorkshire, Lincoln, Nottingham, and other shires of the *Danelagh*, which now terminate in the syllable "*By*," were fixed on them by the Danes, in whose language *By* signifies a place of abode. At a subsequent period, the Danish burghs were recovered by the Anglo-Saxons, but the Danish Thanes were not displaced: and as late as the reign of Ethelred, we can trace their existence as a privileged community, distinct from the kingdom in which they were included. Lincolnshire, or Lindesey, as it was then called, was attacked by the enemy, who advanced simultaneously from Mercia and Northumbria (A.D. 868-870). Here, as the traditions of the country inform us, they were resisted with more

stronger and richer than in other parts of England. Three Danish kings were slain in one battle; and the place where they were buried by their followers, acquired the name of *Thryngolunda*, or *Thrykingham*,\* which it still retains. But fresh reinforcements of the invaders more than supplied the loss. Five kings, Godrun, Bacseg, Eadmund, Osbert, and Hamund, and five *Jerls*, or earls, Freon, Eadgar, and Eadba, and the two Sidrocs, the father and the son, poured their barbarian hordes into the country, and a victory, which they gained as much by accident as by numbers, placed the land wholly in their power. Great numbers of the inhabitants were slain; and all the monasteries, Croylund, Medhamstede (afterwards *Proctingburgh*), Thorney, Ramsey, and Ely, were levelled with the ground.

The Danes had acquired considerable skill in the art of war. And if you trace their operations on the map, you

bridge, now called *Goldbridge*. The glittering of his *golden* spurs discovered him to a newly-married couple, who were returning home by moonlight, and they betrayed him to the Danes. Edmund, as he was dragged from his hiding-place, pronounced a malediction upon all who should afterwards pass this bridge on their way to be married ; and so much regard is paid to this tradition by the good folks of Hoxne, that now (or at least till within the last twenty years) no bride and bridegroom would venture along the forbidden path. It is not because I wish you to place any great reliance upon the minute details of such traditions, that I mention them ; but they enable you to connect the general outline of history with the geography of England, and hence they may be always recollected with utility.

A particular account of Edmund's death was given by his sword-bearer, who, having attained a very advanced age, was wont to repeat the sad story at the court of Athelstane. Edmund was fettered and manacled, and treated with every species of cruelty and indignity. The heathen Danes bound their captive to a tree, beat and scourged him, and shot their arrows at him as a mark—taunting him, and urging him to deny his faith ; but he continued steadfast amidst his sufferings, until Hingvar, wearied by his constancy, commanded that he should be beheaded. His corpse, privately buried by his followers, was, in process of time, removed to a town originally called Badrichesworth, but now St. Edmund's Bury—a monastery having been founded there to his honour by King Canute. Of this building, once the most sumptuous in England, only a few fragments remain ; but the name of "Edmund," transmitted from generation to generation in the families of Norfolk and Suffolk, attests the

respect anciently rendered in East Anglia to the martyred sovereign.

We must now return to the Danes. Elated by the victories which I have briefly narrated, they attacked the kingdom of Wessex (A.D. 871), fighting their way as they advanced, and sustaining many changes of fortune. A bloody battle was fought at Ashdown:\* King Bæseg was slain, together with many other Danish leaders—Sidroc, and Osbern, and Frena, and Harold,—whose names had become the terror of the English nation. A single thorn-bush, which grew in the midst of the field, marked the spot where the fight had raged most furiously; and it was surrounded by heaps of corpses when the English became the masters of the “field of slaughter.” No permanent advantage, however, was gained by this dear-bought victory. Less fortunate conflicts ensued, and the scale was turned against the English, by the continued reinforcements which filled the ranks of the pagan armies. In one of these battles, Ethered received a wound, which, though not immediately fatal, was the cause of his death; the effects of the injury being probably aggravated by the disquiet and mental uneasiness which he sustained.

\* Perhaps *Aston*, near Reading. According to Dr. Kennet, *Ashenden* in Bucks.







## Chapter VI.

*Accession of Alfred—Great Successes of the Danes—Their Conquest of Mercia and Northumbria—Rollo the "Ganger" and the Danes, or Northmen, settle in Neustria or Normandy—Danes conquer the greater part of Wessex—Alfred compelled to secrete himself in Athelney—Alfred rallies his Forces—Recovers his Kingdom—Treaty between Alfred and Guthred—Danish Kingdoms of East Anglia and Northumbria—Hasting invades England—is defeated—Death of Alfred.*

ALFRED, during the life of his brothers, was possessed of a subordinate royal authority. Some writers think that he was acknowledged as king by the Britons of Wales; but this point is not clear. According to the expression employed by Asser, his contemporary biographer, he was invested with a "secondary" power, but no further contemporary exposition is obtained.

Alfred was already so much distinguished, both by his good sense and valour, that he might, had he chosen to do so, have obtained the title of King of Wessex, to the prejudice of Ethered; but he did not covet the dignity; and when, upon the decease of his brother, the voice of the nobles and people designated him as Ethered's successor, he unwillingly accepted the laborious honour.

In those days, royalty, never an easy or enviable station, was accompanied by great danger and toil. A king was compelled to sleep on the hard ground, to encounter every privation and difficulty, and to expose his life for the defence of his crown and people; and, had Alfred been a sluggard, it might have been supposed

that love of ease rendered him unwilling to undertake an office of so much peril. But his conduct, both before and after his accession, disproves this supposition ; and we may, therefore, fully believe that he was actuated by the motive assigned for his reluctance, and transmitted to us by Asser, his biographer and friend. He knew that he could not be furthered in his attempts to govern well, except by the continual aid of providence ; and he feared that such help might not be granted unto him. With this full sense and conviction of his own utter weakness and inability to help himself, did Alfred begin his reign, during which he was enabled to acquire a better reputation than any other monarch of Western Christendom.

England sustained extreme misery and devastation at the period of Alfred's accession to the throne (A.D. 871-872). Nine pitched battles were fought between the English and the Danes in the course of one year. The

Burhred, whom they defeated without difficulty. He escaped beyond the sea to Rome, where he ended his weary days, and was buried in the "school" or college of the English nation.

Mercia was now entirely in the power of the Danes; but, according to their cunning policy, they did not immediately assume the government of the country. There was one Ceolwulf, a Thane, or "minister" of King Burhred, whom they found to be a convenient tool: and they installed him as king; but upon condition that he should be ready to give up his kingdom whenever he should be required by his masters. Ceolwulf, invested with this precarious dominion, acted like a Turkish Pasha: he only endeavoured to make the most of his government. Mercia had been completely ravaged; the greater part of the nobility had fled, or had fallen in battle; few but the peasantry or churls were left. These were plundered most pitilessly by Ceolwulf, who continued to commit every act of oppression, until his Danish masters needed him no longer. As soon as it was convenient for them to do so, they deprived him of his disgraceful authority (A.D. 877).

Northumbria, as you will recollect, had been already overrun; but the Danes had not yet entirely reduced the country. After the death of Osbert and Ella (A.D. 867), they appointed one Egbert, a Northumbrian, to govern, or rather to oppress, Bernicia, as a vassal king, under their supremacy. In one of the revolutions which desolated that country, he was expelled (A.D. 875-876), and Ricsig, a Dane, was appointed in his stead; but the inroads of the enemy were renewed. The pagans, under Halfdane, destroyed churches and monasteries. The ruin of the cathedral of Lindisfarne, in particular.

was deemed as the greatest misfortune of the age. Edmund, one of the prelates of this see, canonized by the general council of the English, was considered as the patron saint of the north; and the island of Lindisfarne was revered as holy land. A considerable tract of land, between the Tyne and Wear, part of the ancient march-land between the two Northumbrian kingdoms,\* had been given to the bishops, and brought into cultivation by their monks. This territory was desolated by the heathen Saxons, and their devastations over every part of Northumbria; nor did they spare the adjoining kingdoms of the Scots and Cumbrians—all were equally desolated. In 878, Alfred completed his conquest by the submission of the Northumbrian territory to his power, and the Saxons, settling amongst the Angles, and the Cumbrians, formed them as to form almost one

During these transactions, a continual predatory war-



St. Cuthbert. (From Durham Cathedral.)





the English—"there will be double that number in the field on the morrow."

The Danes were remarkable for the celerity of their movements, both by sea and land. As soon as they disembarked from their ships, the pirates become a force of cavalry, and dashed through England. This activity magnified their apparent numbers; yet they were really very numerous, and commanded by the most valiant and experienced of the sons of Odin.

Amongst these chieftains was one Hrolf, or Rollo, whom his own countrymen called the "*Gange*," or the "Walker" (before A.D. 786). It is supposed that he was marvellously tall and bulky, and some Danish historians assert that he was always compelled to walk or go on foot, as no horse could bear his weight; and that he hence derived his name. "No,"—say other grave Danish historians;—"Rollo did ride, but when he was on horseback, his long legs almost touched the ground, and thus he seemed to be walking." Since this diversity of opinion exists among the learned, I may have an hypothesis of my own: and I will conjecture that he acquired the name of the "*Ganger*," from his incessant movements against his enemies. Rollo, after an expedition against the Hebrides, landed in England. Defeated, or at least checked, in an obstinate conflict, he drew off to France, where a brighter fortune awaited him. After a long series of events, Rollo succeeded in gaining possession of the province of Neustria (A.D. 912), which the King of the French, Charles the Simple, was compelled to yield to the Danish pirate. This cession, however, was made upon condition that he should consider himself as the vassal of Charles, and that the King of the French should be accepted as the superior of the Duke of

the Northmen. Rollo had little reluctance to enter into this stipulation; and the scene which took place, when he was invested with the territory, will show what kind of subjects the Northmen were likely to prove. It was the custom in Gaul, that the vassal who received a donation should kiss the king's foot; which, after all, being the accustomed form, was no more humiliating than the act of kissing the king's hand. Rollo refused—he said he would bow to no one; but at last he consented to perform the ceremony by deputy, and he beckoned to one of his soldiers to come forward accordingly. The craft and surly Dane obeyed; but seizing hold of the king's foot, he raised it to his lips with so much rudeness and violence, that Charles the Simple was thrown upon his back, amidst the shouts and laughter of the surrounding multitude. Rollo, the "Ganger," who took the name of Rollo, thus became the first Duke of Normandy. Rollo, Rognar and Alan, the chiefs of the Britons

vulnerable portion of his dominions. Alfred, who was fully sensible of the importance attached to naval warfare, had ordered "long ships," or vessels calculated for warfare, to be built in all the ports, wherewith he intended to intercept the pirates; but he was unexpectedly assisted by the elements: a great storm arose, and many of the Danish ships were lost. Alfred's army was sufficiently numerous to allow him to invest the Danes in Exeter, but he could not take the city; and a peace, or truce, was negotiated between the besieged and the besiegers.

The Danes took oaths, and gave hostages, for the due observance of the peace. In the preceding year they had broken a similar engagement contracted in the most solemn manner—by swearing on the "holy ring or bracelet," consecrated to Odin. But they were not believers, even in their own misbelief: they had violated their promise; and the truce into which they had now entered, was infringed by them with equal readiness. The faithlessness of these barbarians was only to be equalled by their ferocity; and such as they were, would the Anglo-Saxons have become, had it not been for the introduction of Christianity.

In the depth of the winter, a season in which military operations can seldom be pursued, the Danes made a sudden irruption into Wilts, and the adjoining shires (A.D. 878). So fearful was their incursion, that a great portion of the inhabitants fled to the Isle of Wight: others submitted. Alfred, almost wholly deprived of his authority, was driven with a small but trusty band of followers,—and his old mother, Osburgha, also accompanied him,—into "Athelney," a secluded spot, at the confluence of the Thone and the Parrett, sur-

as one who increased their mirth and jollity. So skilfully did Alfred act his part, that whilst he entirely escaped suspicion or detection, there was no object which he did not observe, both with eyes and ears. He thus abode amongst the Danes for several days, till he had satisfied his mind upon every matter which he wished to investigate, and he then returned to his hiding-place.

About Easter, Alfred and his followers had completed a "work" or entrenchment, at Athelney, which he destined, and successfully, as the key of his position against the enemy. Seven weeks afterwards, having been joined by the men of Somerset, he sallied forth and took his position at "Egbert's stone," on the verge of the forest of Selwood; which by the *Welsh*, or British inhabitants of Somerset, who perhaps constituted the majority of the population, was called by the name of "*the great forest*,"

his troops : his speech was short and energetic, exhorting them to avail themselves of this, perhaps the last, opportunity of rescuing themselves from shameful slavery. The battle began by a flight of arrows. The English and British lances were next hurled against the Northmen ; and when the missiles were expended, the combatants engaged hand to hand. After a murderous conflict, the English were left masters of the field ; whilst the scattered remnants of the Danish army, under Guthrun, were compelled to take refuge in their entrenchments. Here they were blockaded by Alfred during fourteen days. No succour could be afforded to them by their countrymen ; and at last, being well nigh hunger-starved, they were compelled to accept the terms which Alfred imposed.

Alfred, though victorious, could not expel the Danes from the island of Britain : he was compelled to cede an extensive territory to these invaders, and to Guthrun their king—namely, from the mouth of the Lea to its source, thence to Bedford, and thence along the Ouse to Watling Street, or the ancient Roman road ;—and this territory, together with Northumbria, became from henceforth known by the name of the *Danelagh*, or “Dane-law.”\*

In East Anglia, and in the portions of Essex and Mercia thus ceded, the Danes settled and established themselves : not as enemies, but as vassals to Alfred's crown. Guthrun became a convert to Christianity—Alfred was his godfather ;—and the Danes followed the example of their king. They appear to have been wearied out by their own barbarism. A compact, or treaty, was concluded between Guthrun and Alfred (A.D.

\* See Map III.

878-880), for the confirmation of peace and friendship between the two nations ; and such laws were established, by mutual consent, as were best calculated to ensure a reasonable conformity to the Anglo-Saxon policy, though many of their old customs were still retained by the Danes.

It may be thought that Alfred would have acted more wisely by insisting that the Danes should entirely quit Britain. But, had he done so, how would he have prevented their return in the following year ?—they had the command of the sea. The country had been so much depopulated by the wars, that the settlement of the Danes did not straiten the East Anglians ; and Guthrun, as long as he lived, appears to have continued in peace and friendship with his godfather, rendering to him that subjection which was due from a vassal to his lord.

After the death of Halfdane, the “host” of Danes who

Oswin, and invested with the golden bracelets, the ensigns of royal dignity, and solemnly inaugurated as King of the Northumbrians, though in vassalage to Alfred as his superior. Guthred was deeply indebted to Bishop Eadred; and following the hint given by a second vision of St. Cuthbert, he paid his debt of gratitude by granting and confirming to the bishop, not only the lands between Tyne and Wear, the ancient endowment of Lindisfairne, but the royal dominion over all the land between Tyne and Tees. Alfred assented to this donation: perhaps he directed it should be made; and he probably saw the advantage which would result from the grant. Covered for the greater part with wood and forests, the country in itself was of little value. In the possession of the Church, the soil would be improved, and brought into cultivation; and the respect rendered to St. Cuthbert might perhaps contribute to protect his *Franchise* from hostile invasion. From this ancient donation arose the *Palatinate* rights of the prelates of Durham, which the modern bishops still, in part, retain. All the ultimate property, or dominion of the land in the county palatine, is vested in the bishop, and to him it reverts if the freeholder dies without an heir, or incurs a legal forfeiture. The gift made by the royal donor was so expressed as to convey a complete jurisdiction, and the bishop became a kind of prince within his franchise. He exercised the power of life and death. Like a king, he could pardon and condemn; and even now, the Bishop of Durham may, if he chooses, sit on the bench in his scarlet robes when the judges try a criminal within his palatinate.

Guthred, like Guthrun, continued true and faithful to Alfred; and the English began to enjoy a respite from their enemies. With the Britons, Alfred never was

engaged in war: they seemed, indeed, to consider his government as their best protection, and they submitted completely to his supremacy. In Mercia, where the old royal line had been extinguished, the people whom he had delivered were too happy to hail him as their lord. But, according to the constitution of the Anglo-Saxon states, it was desirable that they should have a ruler of their own; and this authority Alfred bestowed upon his son-in-law, Ethelred (about A.D. 883), who, under the title of Alderman, governed the country with royal power. In the course of seven years after his restoration, Alfred was acknowledged as the paramount monarch of Britain south of the Humber; for, though the Danes were not always obedient, still the theory of their government imported that they were his vassals. Wessex, with its dependencies, the most opulent and favoured portion of the island, was entirely, in fact as well as in



Channel, their movements constituted but part of one great scheme. It was Scandinavian heathendom, against all Christendom. Hence, if they were defeated, it was considered, and truly, that the advantage was for all the civilized nations of Europe; whilst every success which they gained was felt as a common disaster. And upon this ground the Scots claimed and earned the gratitude and friendship of Charlemagne (A.D. 848), for a victory which they obtained over the Northmen. The balance of success, on the whole, was in favour of the heathens: and they were often really victors when they appeared to be vanquished; for even if dispersed, after plundering a city, they were able to carry off as much booty as repaid them for the loss of life, of which they were reckless.

The Chronicles detail a series of attacks sustained by Alfred, after the recovery of his authority, which could only be made intelligible by relating them as they happened, and in chronological order. Here it is sufficient to state, that the Danes continued hovering about the coasts; shifting their quarters from Fulham to Ghent, from the Thames to the Maine, as best answered their purpose. Alfred, on his part, never relaxed his vigilance; and when the armies of the Danes were blockading Paris (A.D. 886), he availed himself of that opportunity to fortify the city of London, which had been repeatedly plundered and insulted by the barbarians.

The siege of Paris lasted during two entire years. It was followed by extensive warfare in the country now called Flanders, then a dependence upon the crown of the Frankish Sovereigns. A great famine ensued (A.D. 893). England still offering many tempting resources, the Danes determined to return to our island; and in

the course of a very few days, the Kentish men saw a fleet of two hundred and fifty vessels, all filled with warriors, stationed off the mouth of the Rother \* and the adjoining shore, whilst another fleet of eighty vessels entered the Thames.

This squadron, formidable from its numbers, was commanded by the famous Hasting, the son of one of the most experienced Danish warriors; and he displayed his skill by forthwith casting up strong entrenchments (A.D. 893), in which his forces took up their position, and continued for about a year. Other bands overspread the country. The Danes of Northumbria and East Anglia, the latter under King Eric, violated their oaths of fealty, and joined their kinsmen in their work of desolation.

Alfred was in much perplexity, yet nothing disheartened. He had great difficulty in bringing up his

the Dane. He relented not; but collected his forces again, and advancing into Mercia, he carried on the war in the very heart of England.

Being surrounded, in a disadvantageous position on the banks of the Severn, the Danes could not obtain any provisions, and were nearly starved. They broke out, and suffered great loss from the Anglo-Saxon armies, which encompassed them. And yet these routed freebooters rallied again in Essex. All that they possessed, and that they valued most, their wives, their children, and their plunder, they committed to the care of their kindred, the East Anglian Danes; and then marching on the stretch, day and night, they crossed the island, and threw themselves into Chester (A.D. 895), then devoid of inhabitants. It had been very strongly fortified by the Romans; and the noble arched gateways, built by them, were standing until a recent period.\* Chester, after the Roman period, was successively occupied by the Britons and Anglo-Saxons; but the city had been abandoned during the convulsions of the times. The direction of the Danes towards this distant point, shows how well they were acquainted with the military capabilities of the country. Amidst all their apparent irregularity, they made war by system. Wales was also plundered by the Danes; and the Britons found, to their cost, that the "black strangers"† were as bitter enemies as the "sassenagh." As soon as they had gathered this harvest of plunder, away again they marched. Alfred and his army were distanced by their rapid movements;

\* They were destroyed to please the Corporation.

† By the Welsh, as also by the Irish, the Danes were called the "black men," or the "black strangers;" the origin of this appellation is not well ascertained. Perhaps it arose from the colour of their garments or armour.

and long before the winter had set in, the Danes were stationed in Essex, and in the southern parts of the kingdom.

The Danish forces pressed so close upon London, that Alfred was compelled to encamp with his army round about the city, whilst the citizens got in their harvest. London, as I have before observed, was a place of considerable trade ; but the great majority of the burgesses, as in all the Anglo-Saxon towns, were husbandmen and soldiers. The Danes, wary and considerate, had selected a station about twenty miles from London, situated on the river Lea ; and that river, then much deeper than it is at present, was filled with their vessels. Alfred, certainly not without much danger to himself, surveyed the Danish camp, and devised a plan for preventing further annoyance from the enemy. He caused two fortifications or bulwarks to be erected on either shore of the Lea,

again revisited England. Many of the Danes, who had lost all their gains and plunder by the casualties of war, put themselves afloat again, and carried on their attacks with great vigour, infesting and harassing the country. Alfred constantly sought to meet them, and he caused "long ships" \* to be constructed, steadier in their draught, higher in their sides, and swifter in their course, than any others. The Danish and Frisian build appears hitherto to have been considered as the best model of naval architecture; but these more serviceable ships were after a plan of Alfred's own.

In a battle off the coast of Devonshire, the new vessels were tried against the enemy. Alfred's ships were principally officered by Frieslanders, who were, perhaps, better seamen than his own subjects, though not better warriors. After the battle, two of the Danish ships were cast on shore; their crews were conducted to Alfred at Winchester, and he ordered that they should be hanged—a cruel and unjustifiable act of vengeance. The Danes do not seem to have violated the law of nations, as such law was then understood. Mortal punishment, thus inflicted upon the wretches whom misfortune had placed in Alfred's power, was contrary to the customs of his age, as well as irreconcilable to the dictates of mercy; and we must acknowledge this stain upon the character of our Anglo-Saxon king.

That he yielded to a feeling of vengeance, is, perhaps, to be ascribed to the contemplation of the miseries which the Danes had inflicted upon his people. In addition to the harm occasioned by the war, sickness had, as usual, followed the host of the destroyers; and very many of

\* So called in the Chronicles. The term is Latin, and, as well as the model, may have been taken by Alfred from the Romans.

the "mightiest Thanes," or people of the greatest consequence, had perished by the pestilence (Oct. 27th, 901). Alfred died six nights before "All-Hallows Mass-day," in the year 901, in the fifty-third year of his age; prematurely, if years be alone reckoned, but full of desert and honour.



**King Alfred.**

**Page 120.**



**Alfred's Jewel.**

**Page 120.**





## Chapter VII.

*Alfred, "the wisest man in England"—Literature and Cultivation of the Anglo-Saxons—The Runes—The Latin Alphabet introduced by the Roman Missionaries—Difficulty of explaining Runic Inscriptions—Art of Writing not much practised, and comparatively of small importance—Use of Visible Symbols in Legal Transactions instead of Written Instruments—Poetry, extemporaneous—Historical Poetry of the Anglo-Saxons—Scarcity of Books—Printing—Possible Decay of Literature and Science.*

ALFRED, the "Shepherd of his people," the "Darling of the English," for these were the epithets given to him in the old time, was deemed the "wisest man" in England. This *superlative*, however, affords no definite means of comparison. In order to understand the real importance of Alfred's acquirements, it will be necessary to take a general view of the cultivation which existed amongst the people over whom he ruled.

Before the conversion of the Anglo-Saxons, they, like most of the Teutonic nations, employed certain mysterious characters denominated *Runes*—mysterious, I call them, because the name implies *secrecy*. The heathen Teutons supposed that these letters possessed magical powers. Some Runes, as they believed, could stop the vessel in her course, divert the arrow in its flight, cause love or hatred, raise the corpse from the grave, or cast the living into death-like slumber. The origin of these characters, which, with some variations, were also used by the Celtic nations, ascends into the

most remote antiquity. Many of the letters were named after trees—

𐌿 *A*, or *Ac*, *Oak*. 𐌶 *B*, *Beorc*, *Birch*. 𐌥 *Th*, *Thorn*.

Some from other natural objects, 𐌺 *H*, *Hagel*, or *Hail*.

𐌺 *Is*, or *Ice*; and 𐌰 *M*, *Man*, may be instanced; and, in short, all the names have some meaning.

The Runes have formed the subject of many erudite dissertations, and have been explained by the learned, with more satisfaction to themselves than to their readers,—who are often strangely perplexed by the most singular conflict of opinions amongst their guides. Thus, an inscription upon a pillar at Bewcastle,\* which, in the eye of the renowned *Olaus Wormius*, expresses, "*Reno satu runa stena thissa*,"—"Reno fixed this runic stone,"—is interpreted by the ingenious *Grimm* (whose clever "*Nursery Tales*" have perhaps amused you) as



Runic Pillar at Bewcastle.

Page 122.



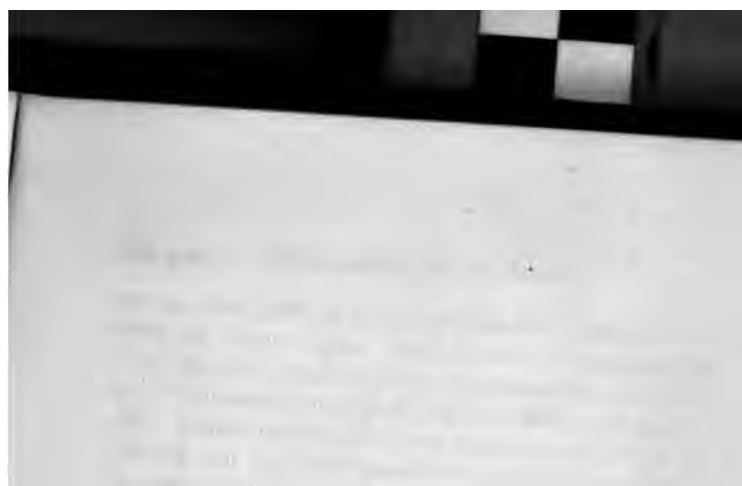
font; Harold's mother and Mabrok were forgotten, and Eckard continued in full possession of his honours, until he was, in his turn, deprived of them by a most worthy Warwickshire archæologist,\* who reads—"Richard he me wrought, and to this form me diligently brought." Richard, therefore, is now in possession of the Runic font; but let him beware! According to despatches, addressed by our Minister at Copenhagen to the Foreign Secretary of the Antiquaries of London, the "*Skandinaviske Selskab*," or *Scandinavian Society*, had nearly completed their attack upon Richard—begun in 1821, when Mr. Hamper's paper was received,—and by which the said Richard was to be compelled to march away, bag and baggage, and *Thorbrand* installed in his stead!

It may perhaps be thought that a spell has been cast over the learned, and that some sportive Puck yet lurks about the Runes, and seduces the grave antiquaries into these interminable wanderings. Let me be allowed, however, to observe, that I doubt whether, in these and similar instances, any true reading can ever be obtained, unless the object itself (or a cast from it) be inspected by those who undertake the task of interpretation. No draughtsman's copy, however skilful he may be, will ever be accurate, unless he can read the inscription, and his mind guides his pencil. If he be ignorant of its meaning, he may mistake an accidental indentation or flaw for a letter;—he will omit the line, nearly effaced by time, which joined the parts,—he will lengthen a curve that has been broken,—and shorten a limb which has been partly filled up;—and the aggregate of these

\* William Hamper, Esq., to whose very ingenious paper (*Archæologia*, vol. xix. p. 379) I must refer.

errors, though each may be trifling in itself, will cast an impenetrable veil over features, which, under the most favourable circumstances, were sufficiently obscure.

Puck has caused me, also, to wander somewhat out of my course, and we must now return to our Runes. The continental Danes retained them till a very late period: they are found in sepulchral inscriptions of the fourteenth century, and on rings and cups, and ornaments perhaps of later date; and I am not quite sure whether they are not used for some purposes in the island of Rugen at the present day. It was otherwise amongst the Anglo-Saxons; for when they were converted to Christianity, the Runic characters went almost wholly out of use. Actuated by the wish of abolishing all usages which were too nearly connected with idolatry to be allowed with safety, the Roman missionaries endeavoured to introduce the Latin character amongst the nations whom





Anglo-Saxon Illuminated Letter.



letters which are really its own. The sign of the sound expressed in English by our *th* was unknown to the ancient Romans, though it had been familiar to the Greeks; and, therefore, in order to denote the *th*, the missionaries sometimes employed the ancient rune þ or þ. They also used another sign for the *th*, namely, a ð, with a small line drawn through the top of the letter, thus ð. And the rune ƿ or ƿ, was retained to denote the sound which we give to our W, a sound which, like that of the *th*, was then also foreign to those who understood only the Latin or Roman language, or those vulgar tongues called *Romance* dialects, into which it had been corrupted by the common people. I believe, however, that the use of the Runes did lurk amongst the Anglo-Saxons, and that they employed the ancient characters for magical charms. And the Danish population of Northumbria certainly retained the Runes till the Conquest, as is proved by the Bewcastle and Bridekirk monuments, and many others of a similar description.

Reading and writing, though no longer mysteries, as in the Pagan age, were still acquirements almost wholly confined to the clergy. Hence the word "Clericus," or "Clerk," became synonymous with Penman, the sense in which it is still most usually employed. If a man could write, or even read, his knowledge was considered as proof presumptive that he was in holy orders. If kings and great men had occasion to authenticate any document, they subscribed the "*sign*" of the cross opposite to the place where the "clerk" had written their name. Hence we say, to *sign* a deed or a letter. Illiterate people still make their signs or *marks*, in this manner, just as king Offa used to do, by drawing a +, by the side whereof the lawyer's clerk adds their Christian and

surnames. You sometimes see the ruins of an ancient palace degraded to a hovel; and it is thus with such old customs. They sink lower and lower, as the manners or opinions of the world rise above them, till at last they can be found only amongst the humblest orders of society.

The laity, or people who were not clerks, did not feel any urgent necessity for the use of letters. Commerce was carried on principally by truck or barter, or by payments in ready money; and sums were cast up, as amongst the Romans, upon an abacus or accounting-table, the amount being denoted by *counters* or similar tokens. From the difficulty of communicating between place and place, common people had seldom any opportunity of conveying intelligence to absent friends. Many important transactions, which now require writing, could then be effected by word of mouth, or, as lawyers say, by *parole*. At the present day, if you wish to buy a





Runic Font at Bridekirk.

Page 122.



received *seizin* or possession, the key of the door, or a bundle of thatch plucked from the roof, signified that the dwelling had been yielded up to him. These symbols were sometimes varied by the fancy of the grantor. One delivered a knife, with a hair of his beard; another, a glove; a third, a curry-comb; a fourth, his drinking-horn. Ulfus, a noble of Northumbria, disinherited his sons, and granted his lands to the Archbishopric of York, in this manner, by laying his mighty ivory drinking-horn upon the altar, at the same time that he declared his intention; and the horn of Ulfus is yet kept in the minster; for such tokens being the testimonies of the right to property, were preserved with as much care as title-deeds or charters; and a part of the "Terra Ulfi" is yet in the possession of the chapter of the cathedral. And the intent of these visible symbols was also to supply the place of writing, by impressing the transaction upon the recollection of the witnesses, who were called together upon the occasion.

No small share of such knowledge as was both useful and entertaining, might be learned without book; for many matters now consigned to writing, were then oral and traditionary. Poetry, to us a kind of luxury, was in those times turned to homely use. In the ruder stages of society, verse has been very generally employed as the vehicle for preserving a record of facts, or for inculcating doctrines confided to the memory; and this state of things continued to its fullest extent amongst our English ancestors, as well as amongst their Scandinavian brethren. Their legal formulæ were in verse—the achievements of their ancestors were commemorated in song. Some of these poems still exist, and others have evidently furnished materials for prose-histories or

chronicles. Greatly did the Anglo-Saxons delight in rhythm and harmony. The harp was handed round at their festivals; and he who could not join in the glee (this word is pure Anglo-Saxon) was considered as unfit for respectable company. Aldhelm, Bishop of Sherbourne, could find no mode of commanding the attention of his townsmen so efficacious, as that of standing on the bridge and singing a ballad, which he had composed; and it may be interesting to add, that we owe this anecdote to Alfred himself, who preserved in his "hand-book," or manual.

Of course, all the good to be derived from recited verse was accessible to the illiterate, and letters were hardly more necessary to the poets themselves. Verse, amongst the northern nations, was often composed extemporaneously; and, according to the practice of the *improvisatori* in Italy, either to the sound of an instrument, or at least in song. Some little was reduced into writing:

employ themselves in studies which were surrounded by such difficulties.

Books were extremely rare amongst the Scandinavian and northern nations. Before their communication with the Latin missionaries, wood appears to have been the material upon which their runes were chiefly written : and the verb " write," which is derived from a Teutonic root, signifying to scratch or tear,\* is one of the testimonies of the usage. The Cymri adopted the same plan. Their poems were graven upon small staves or rods, one line upon each face of the rod ; and the old English word " Stave," as applied to a stanza, is probably a relic of the practice, which, in the early ages, prevailed in the west. In the east, you will find the custom still subsisting ; the slips of bamboo upon which the inhabitants of the Indian Archipelago now write or scratch their compositions with a bodkin, are substantially the same with our ancient staves. Vellum or parchment afterwards supplied the place of these materials. Real paper, manufactured from the pellicle of the Egyptian reed, or *papyrus*, was still used occasionally in Italy, but it was seldom exported to the countries beyond the Alps ; and the elaborate preparation of the vellum, upon which much greater care was bestowed than in the modern manufacture, rendered it a costly article : so much so, that a pains-taking clerk could find it worth his while to erase the writing of an old book, in order to use the blank page for another manuscript. Books thus rewritten are called " codices rescripti," or " palimpsests." The evanescent traces of the first layer of characters may occasionally be discerned beneath the more recent text which has been imposed upon them ; and some

\* *Ritsen* or *reissen*.

valuable fragments of ancient classical writers have been lately recovered from such volumes, by the patient diligence of foreign antiquaries.

The works from which any useful or elegant learning could be derived, were to be read only in the Latin language, and this tongue, though living, as far as the clerks were concerned (for Latin was used in all documents and transactions relating to church affairs), could not be acquired without great difficulty. Old crabbed Priscian was the only grammatical author whom the learner could consult; and instead of the ready aid which we now receive from copious and critical dictionaries and lexicons, all helps of that description were then wholly absent. Perhaps there might be a meagre vocabulary, of which three or four copies existed in a whole kingdom; but a stock of words could only be acquired from oral instruction. Hard drudgery this for the



by Guttenbergh or Koster, but the great length of time which elapsed before it was put in use by the nations of Western Christendom.

The principle of printing, the employment of a solid type or letter, for the purpose of taking an impression by means of a coloured pigment—and which is only a variation of the effect produced by a die or seal—was certainly known to the Romans. Stamps, with raised letters, exactly like our printing types, excepting that they are not moveable, and by which the Romans produced short inscriptions, are yet extant. Common tradesmen employed such stamps for printing the labels of their wares. The ancient Visigoths in Spain printed their “paraphs” or “signs,” flourished with knots and monograms, which they affixed to their deeds and charters.

These are instances upon a small scale; but we know of one entire and very important volume produced by the process of printing, anterior to the fifth century. The silver letters of the “*Codex argenteus*,” the volume containing the version of the Gospels, made by Ulfila, bishop of the Mæsogoths (of which I shall speak more fully hereafter), were produced by types employed to fix the leaf upon the purple parchment, nearly in the manner now practised by bookbinders.

From this stage of printing, for printing it was though tedious and operose, to our present mode, the transition appears most easy. Yet the discovery was not made; and in Europe there was a barrier which could not be passed. Not so in China, where block-printing came into active operation within that period, which, to us, is the darkest age. There, the practice and effects of the art must have been witnessed by the acute and ingenious Venetian traveller, Marco Polo. This individual was

gifted with no ordinary powers of observation; and it might have been expected that the increasing desire for learning which prevailed in his own country, would have induced him to bring back so useful and so profitable a contrivance. Roger Bacon, who had received much information concerning China, describes the process, not in obscure and mysterious terms, but with the utmost plainness and precision of language. Yet he failed to teach the lesson which he had learnt, nor was the disclosure made till the appointed time.

I have brought these facts together, because we are often disposed to consider the progress of the human mind as the result of unaided human exertion, and the fruit of mere human experience. Unquestionably these are the means; but the general march of intellect is as fully under the direction and control of Providence as any other portion of human affairs. If the knowledge

Let it be granted that no one conflagration could destroy the myriads of volumes which have become the records of the human mind; yet it does not necessarily follow that the inhabitants of Britain, a thousand, or even a hundred years hence, will be able to profit by the lore of their ancestors. Men may be in possession of tools, and at the same time be utterly unable to use them. The cultivation of the vastly diversified field of human acquirement, depends wholly upon the supply of labourers, and the capability which they have of reaping the harvest. Learning and science are wholly sustained by our artificial and perishable state of society. If, in consequence of a total subversion of our laws and institutions, property should be so divided, that, instead of that gradation of ranks which is now established, there should be only a working class, degraded by poverty, debased by infidelity, without wealth to reward learning or leisure to enjoy inquiry, all the attainments upon which we pride ourselves may ultimately disappear. Those who are now stimulated to study by the hopes of worldly advancement, would fall off; and that class by whom learning is pursued only for its own sake, would cease to exist. With the decline of public prosperity, with the destruction of private capital, all the arts which are directly or indirectly connected with commerce or manufactures would decay. The abstract sciences would be neglected or forgotten. And though some branches might be pursued by a solitary sage, still they would be as null, to a world in which he would find none able and willing to profit by his knowledge.

### Chapter VIII.

*Alfred's early Education—His want of proper Instructors—Great Decay of Learning in England, after the Danish Invasions—Translations of the Bible in the early part of the Middle Ages—Discouraged amongst the nations who spoke the Romance Dialects, and encouraged by those who spoke Teutonic—Ulfila—Cædmon—Alfred's Plans for the Restoration of Learning.*

ALFRED was wholly ignorant of letters until he attained twelve years of age. He was greatly loved by his parents, who fondled the boy for his beauty; but that instruction which the poorest child can now acquire with the sweetest ease, was withheld from the son of the

It chanced one day that Alfred's mother,—his own mother, Osburgha, and not, as some people suppose, the French woman Judith—showed to him and his brothers a volume of Anglo-Saxon poetry which she possessed. "He who first can read the book shall have it," said she. Alfred's attention was attracted by the bright gilding and colouring of one of the illuminated capital letters. He was delighted with the *gay*, and inquired of his mother, —would she really keep her word? She confirmed the promise, and put the book into his hands; and he applied so steadily to his task, that the book became his own.

The information which Alfred now possessed, rendered him extremely desirous of obtaining more; but his ignorance of Latin was an insuperable obstacle. Science and knowledge could not be acquired otherwise than from Latin books; and earnestly as he sought for instruction in that language, none could be found. Sloth had overspread the land; and there were so few "Grammarians," that is to say Latinists, in Wessex, that he was utterly unable to discover a competent teacher. In after life, Alfred was accustomed to say, that of all the hardships, privations, and misfortunes which had befallen him, there was none which he felt so grievous as this, the enforced idleness of his youth, when his intellect would have been fitted to receive the lesson, and his time was unoccupied. At a more advanced period, the arduous toils of royalty, and the pressure of most severe and unintermitting pain, interrupted the studies which he was then enabled to pursue, and harassed and disturbed his mind,—yet he persevered;—and the unquenchable thirst for knowledge which the child had manifested, continued, without abatement, until he was removed from this stage of exertion.

In the eighth century, the age of Bede, Britain was distinguished for learning; the rapid decline of cultivation had been occasioned by the Danish invasions. The churches and monasteries were particularly the objects of their attacks; these establishments, the only libraries and schools which then existed, were burnt, or razed to the ground; and the clergy had fallen into such a state of deplorable ignorance, as to be utterly unfitted for the sacred office. "South of the Humber," says Alfred, for we can quote his own words, "there were few priests, indeed, when I began my reign, who could understand the meaning of their 'common prayer,' or translate a line of Latin into English; so few, that in Wessex there was not one."

Throughout great part of Europe, there was a strong prejudice against the employment of the vernacular tongues as written languages. The "*Romance*"\*  
dialects of Gaul and Spain and Italy were broken Latin

cultivation, these irregular dialects have acquired beauty and elegance; but, to the learned, who, though they may have been deficient in critical nicety, were quite familiar with the correct forms of the Latin language, these *patois* must have sounded as ludicrous as the *hulke talkes* of our negroes in the Colonies, to which they bear the closest analogy. Such a language might be, and was applied to the oral instruction of the common people, from the necessity of the case; and discourses were delivered from the pulpit in what was termed "the rustic tongue." But the employment of this jargon in a literary composition, would have seemed as derogatory to the writer. Still less could they venture to employ it in translations of the Holy Scriptures; for they feared that the dignity of the sacred writings would be profaned by the association of ideas arising from a plebeian idiom, bearing the stamp of ignorance and vulgarity.

There are few transgressions more seductive to us all, than that disrespectful treatment of the word of God which is to all intents and purposes a breach of the third Commandment; and we are therefore bound to guard ourselves against the error with the most watchful care. It is of the greatest importance that we should resist the temptation, frequently so strong, of annexing a familiar, facetious, or irreverent idea to a scriptural word, a scriptural expression, a scriptural text, or a scriptural name. Nor should we hold ourselves justified, because we may have been misled by some religious writer, or of reflection. Every person who reads the Bible should be careful to read a portion of it at least once a week, and to do so because the Scriptures are the Word of God, and are always true and right, and are our only rule and guide in all our conduct and life, and are our only source of wisdom and knowledge, and are our only source of comfort and consolation in all our trials and tribulations.

elegance of the original. But how much more urgent is the duty, by which we are bound to keep the pages of the Bible clear of any impression tending to diminish the blessing of habitual respect and reverence towards our Maker's law !

We must therefore admit that the general principle which induced the clergy of Gaul and Spain and Italy, to avoid clothing the Scriptures in what they considered a degrading garb, was right and sound ; but the particular application of that principle was evidently incorrect. The Romance dialects were the only languages understood by the great body of the people. They were a mixed race, speaking a mixed tongue. In their ears, the solecisms and barbarisms which offended the grammarian, had no uncouth or displeasing sound ; and it was only the fastidiousness of human knowledge which induced the clergy to condemn the language employed, even by themselves, in all the ordinary concerns of life



avoid. Thus, Ulfila, the Bishop of the Masogoths, made that singularly valuable translation of the New Testament, to which I have before alluded. The Gospels are extant in the Codex Argenteus.\* Other fragments of the Acts and Epistles have been recently recovered from "palimpsests." And if you should ever feel disposed to investigate the origin and structure of the English language which you speak, you will find that Ulfila's version affords the best and most valuable materials for the inquiry.

Translations, or rather paraphrases of parts of the Bible, were not unfrequently made in verse. The Teutonic nations, as I have before observed, were so much accustomed to view poetry as the means of instruction, that such a mode of rendering the Scripture accessible and agreeable to the common people, was fit and praiseworthy. The rhythm helped the memory of the learner; and in some cases, the idiomatic freedom of the composition enabled the translator to produce a more intelligible version than he could otherwise have effected; for ancient translators often imagined that a faithful interpretation could only be effected by placing every word of the version in the exact position of the corresponding word in the original. An Anglo-Saxon translation of the Psalms upon this plan is extant; and, with the exception of the articles and particles not employed in the Latin, each Anglo-Saxon word covers, as it were, the corresponding word in the Vulgate or Latin text.

Of the sacred poems of the Anglo-Saxons, none were more celebrated or more singular than those of Cædmon.

\* Now preserved in the library of the University of Upsal. A palimpsest at Wolfenbützel has furnished a small fragment of the Epistles. Many more have since been discovered in the Vatican by Mall. Ulfila's Version is supposed to have been made about 380.

Until he had attained more than the middle stage of life (about A.D. 670), Cædmon had never been able to repeat a stave. If he happened to be in a company where each guest was bound to sing in his turn, he used, when he saw that the harp was approaching him, to rise and quit the feast for very shame; so much abashed was he by his inferiority.

It chanced once upon a time, that, having thus slunk away from a banquet, because he saw the dreaded harp coming nigh to him, he was glad to take refuge in the stable. It was Cædmon's turn to tend the cattle; and thus escaping from the humiliation which would have awaited him amongst his companions, he fell asleep in the straw. In the course of the night, he dreamt that a stranger came unto him, and asked him to sing. "Nay," Cædmon answered in his dream,—“Do I know how to sing? and is not that the reason why I have left the

road company?” His imaginary companion still urged

To these lines he added many others, and the first person to whom he repeated his strain, was the Reeve or steward of his village, or township of Streoneshalch, now called Whitby, where there was a celebrated monastery.

The story, though remarkable, is neither incredible nor marvellous, and may be entirely explained by natural causes. Cædmon's nervous bashfulness shows that he possessed a quick and excitable temperament. He retired to sleep, but not to rest, with his mind full of the mortifications to which he was continually exposed, and probably with an earnest desire to avoid these vexations in future. Anglo-Saxon poetry was very simple in its construction. *End-rhymes* were not used; the harmony of each short verse depended chiefly upon the *alliteration*, or the recurrence of the initial letters of the words, and upon a kind of loose and varying rhythm, regulated rather by the ear, than by any fixed metrical canon. The Anglo-Saxons had a great store of poetical expressions, differing from the language of common life, and forming the stock-in-trade of the bard, yet rendered very familiar to the ear by their constant and daily repetition, and therefore likely to be forcibly impressed upon the recollection. Cædmon's inability to perform his part appears to have arisen rather from his want of musical knowledge than from his dulness. And therefore, it is quite possible, that, allowing for some little exaggeration, his poetical talent may have been suddenly developed, nearly in the manner before described.

Cædmon was forthwith introduced by the Reeve, as the wonder of the village, into the abbey of St. Hilda, where a large and learned auditory had assembled. After hearing his hymn, they gave him a subject from sacred

he was able to deliver to put it into verse, doubting, however, whether any poet has done, he had not been able to do any trifling ones. But Cædmon stood forth the next following day he produced his composition, which met with great applause. Cædmon was the subject of the proposition of those who thought him a man of good will and usefully employed in the study of the Scriptures. He became a monk in the monastery of St. Peterburgh. Read he could not; but he was conversant with what were accustomed from time to time to be recitations of sacred history: and when he was discharged of his world, after much consideration he began to sing his lesson to his teachers in a metrical manner, which Cædmon complete, not indeed the whole of the Scriptures, but a selection of passages containing the great history of the creation and the progress of mankind, besides many hymns and devotional poems. "Never," says Bede, "did Cædmon

the first being the collection of poems—was a volume containing a selection from the Psalms, with the daily prayers, according to the ancient usage of the church; and during his seclusion in the isle of Athelney, the perusal of this volume, which he always treasured in his bosom, afforded him constant comfort and support.

Alfred's plans for the intellectual cultivation of his country, were directed, in the first instance, to the diffusion of knowledge amongst the great body of the people. Hence he earnestly recommended the translation of "useful books into the language which we all understand; so that all the youth of England, but more especially those who are of gentle-kind and at ease in their circumstances, may be grounded in letters,—for they cannot profit in any pursuit until they are well able to read English." This opinion is extracted from a document appearing to have been a circular letter addressed by Alfred to the bishops; and the desire which it expresses is the best proof of the sincerity of his intentions, and the grasp and comprehensiveness of his mind. Much had been done on the continent for the cultivation of learning, particularly by Charlemagne; but the munificence of the Frankish emperor, and of those who thought like him, was calculated to confine the gift within the pale of the cloister. The general tendency of the middle ages was to centre all erudition in a particular caste, severed from the rest of society. Alfred's labours, on the contrary, were directed to enable every individual to have a share, according to his station and degree, in the common inheritance of wisdom.

Alfred had taught himself Latin by translating. You will recollect his regret at the want of masters in early life. As soon as he was settled in his kingdom, he

attempted to supply this deficiency, not only for himself, but also for his people, by inviting learned men from foreign parts. Asser, a native of St. David's, or Men-  
evia, whom he appointed Bishop of Sherbourne, was one of them. Great friendship and confidence prevailed between Alfred and the British priest; and to the pen of Asser we owe a biography of the Anglo-Saxon monarch, written with equal simplicity and fidelity. Grim-  
bald, at the invitation of Alfred, left Gaul, his own country, and settled in England. A third celebrated foreigner was called *Johannes Scotus*, from his nation, or *Erigena*, the Irishman, from the place of his birth. Athens had been visited by Erigena, and many years had he passed in Asia—years employed in arduous study. He was a deep philosopher, and soundly versed in the Greek, the Hebrew, the Syriac, the Chaldee, and the Arabic languages; acquisitions of some difficulty in any

a blank leaf of that collection of psalms and hymns, which, as I have before mentioned, he always carried in his bosom ; but not a blank could be found of sufficient magnitude. Pursuant therefore to Asser's proposal, a *quire*, or *quaternion*, that is to say, a sheet of vellum, folded into *fours*, was produced, on which these texts were written ; and Alfred afterwards working upon them, translated the passages so selected into the Anglo-Saxon tongue.

He now continued the practice of writing down such remarkable passages as were quoted in conversation. His "hand-boc" or manual, however, included some matters of his own observation, anecdotes, or sayings of pious men ; but the body of the collection appears to have consisted of extracts from the Scriptures, intermingled with reflections of a devotional cast.

Alfred, thus encouraged, appears to have been induced to attempt a complete version of the Bible. Some writers, and those not of a recent period, have supposed that he completed the greater portion of the task. It seems, however, that the work was prevented by his early death. But the impulse given by Alfred did not die with him. Translations were multiplied. A new version of the Pentateuch, and of some of the apocryphal books, was undertaken by Bishop Alfric, the best philologist of his age ; and who, in his preface, refuted certain objections which had been raised against similar labours. These objections show, that the mistaken judgment which has since seduced the members of the Church of Rome into many errors, was then beginning to develop itself amongst individual members ; but Alfric's opposition also proves how little countenance they met with in the ancient Church of England ; and the rubrics prefixed to the

lessons of the Anglo-Saxon version of the Gospels, leave no reason to doubt, but that they were regularly read in the churches on Sundays and festivals. Large portions of the Scripture were also introduced in the Anglo-Saxon homilies or sermons, and the study of the Holy Scriptures was most earnestly recommended both to clergy and laity, as the ground-work of their faith.\* Several versions of the New Testament are still extant in manuscript. In a remote part of the country, it might sometimes be easier for a prelate to make a new translation, than to borrow a manuscript for the purpose of transcription. Other clerks may have wished to present the Scriptures to the people of a particular district in a dialect which should be thoroughly intelligible to them. The provincialisms now found in different counties of the east and west and north of England, then existed in the shape of distinct idioms, differing as much from each other as the language of Allan Ramsay does from that of Shenstone. A colle-



It is to such causes that the existence of the different texts of the Anglo-Saxon versions may be attributed. But, at the same time, it is necessary to observe, that the subject cannot be properly investigated until the monuments and muniments of the biblical studies of our ancestors be brought to light. From the Anglo-Saxon age, down to Wickliffe, we, in England, can show such a succession of biblical versions, in metre and in prose, as are not to be equalled amongst any other nation of Europe. But we have not yet produced our stores; nay, though the greater part of the manuscripts of these versions are in the libraries of the University of Oxford, I regret to say, that they remain utterly neglected, and mouldering on their shelves.

### Chapter IX.

*Works translated by Alfred, or under his Direction—Bede, Orosius, Boethius, St. Augustine, &c.—Encourages Travelers—His Embassy to the Syrian Christians in Hindostan—Prudent Management of his Affairs—Alfred's Character—Its Imperfections and Merits—Alfred's Laws—His Principles of Legislation.*

WE must now advert to Alfred's "Family Library," or "Library of useful Knowledge." As far as we can judge from those portions of the plan which were carried into execution, he intended to present his subjects with a complete course of such works as were then considered

of the natives of Germany; and the voyages of Audher towards the North Pole, and of Wulstan in the Baltic, are detailed as these travellers related them to the Anglo-Saxon King.

Orosius supplied as much information concerning general history, as an English student would usually require. The History of *Venerable Bede*, also rendered into Anglo-Saxon by Alfred, instructed the learner in the annals of his own country. In this work, Alfred did not depart from his original; and we must regret, that no such original anecdotes as diversified the pages of the king's "hand-book" have found their place in his "Ecclesiastical History." Still, considered merely as a version, the idiomatic richness of the style gives it great beauty; and as it is translated from the most trustworthy and accurate of the writers of the Middle Ages, so is it the earliest history of any of the states formed during the Middle Ages which can be read in the language of the people to whom it relates; for the "Saxon Chronicle" is of a subsequent period.

In the "Consolations of Philosophy," *Boethius* attempted, and not unsuccessfully, to adorn the lessons of revelation by the imagery of the classical age, and to imbue the doctrines of Plato with the better spirit of Christianity. Alfred appears to have delighted in his task. First, he interpreted the "Book-Latin" *word for word*. Having thoroughly mastered the meaning, he then explained the text *sense for sense*, "in the English phrase." The narratives taken from Ancient Mythology, such as the story of Orpheus and Euridice, and interspersed in the dialogue of Boethius, are expanded by Alfred into pleasing tales, such as the Glee-man recited during the intervals of his song. In expounding

the "metres" of Boethius, Alfred took a wider range; and his paraphrases, though they preserve the leading thoughts of the "Book Latin," contain so many of the king's own ideas, and are adorned with so many flowers of Anglo-Saxon poetry, that if we describe them as original compositions, we shall only assign to them the rank which they deserve.

A selection of extracts from the "*Confessions of St. Augustine*," the "*Pastoral Instructions of St. Gregory*," and the Dialogues composed by that Pope, also form a portion of the Latin Library translated by Alfred, and are yet existing. His other works are no longer extant; and we must lament the loss of his Apologues, of "wonderful sweetness," which seem to have been a collection of Esopian Fables, imitated from Phædrus, or perhaps from some other of the collections into which these Eastern parables had been transfused.



Tower of Oxford Castle.

Page 180.



Abbot Elfnioth and St. Augustus, Archbishop of Canterbury. Page 180.





Costume of a Female, exhibiting the under and upper sleeved Tunic, the Mantle and Hood. (Harleian MS.)



Anglo-Saxon Females.  
The standing figure is Etheidrytha, a Princess of East Anglia, from the Benedictional of St. Ethelwold.



Civil Costume of the Anglo-Saxons. Page 150.





their case hopeless, were allowed to find substitutes ; a son, or a near kinsman, or, failing both, a vassal, or even a slave, who was to learn in the place of his principal. This appears, at first, to be a whimsical, and somewhat despotic regulation : but if we consider it as intended to supply a succession of persons, qualified by education to render themselves useful to the community, we may have reason to admire his liberality and his wisdom.

Travelling, in ancient times, was very different from what it is at the present day ; coaches and carriages were not invented, and the only vehicles which went upon wheels were carts and waggons ; and these so heavy and clumsy, that there is not a farmer in the country who would use the like of them. When people wished to go any distance, they were forced to ride all the way upon horseback ; so those who were sick or infirm could hardly ever leave their houses. You could not even change your horse at different stages ; when the animal was tired, you were obliged to stop till he had rested ; and if he fell lame, or died, then you were forced to buy another—that is, if you could,—for sometimes the inhabitants would refuse to deal with you, and then you could not get on at all. Perhaps you would think, “ Well, but at all events, a strong healthy man, with a good horse, could travel very pleasantly, and go a long way without encountering much difficulty.” And so he might, provided he could always be sure of finding a good road ; but that was not by any means certain,—in those times there were very few roads upon which one could travel with safety. The wise Romans made excellent roads, extending through all parts of their empire ; and some of them can yet be traced in England, running along as straight as an arrow ; one of these is Watling-street, so often mentioned

in history: but after the fall of the Roman empire, their roads were neglected, and they fell into decay, and the traveller could hardly proceed without great danger, or, at least, without great fatigue. All at once your horse plunged into a marsh, or you came to a river, and the bridge was broken down; and when you tried to ford the stream, your horse might get out of his depth, and then he and his rider would be nearly drowned. Sometimes the traveller had to pass through a dark forest, full of ravenous bears and wolves; and, when he came to the end of his day's journey, instead of putting up at a comfortable inn, he was often compelled to stretch his cloak on the damp earth, in some wretched hut, or on the broken pavement of a haunted, ruined temple, open to the starless sky. And, what was worst, the kings and princes were almost always at war with each other, and a stranger was constantly liable to be plundered and

would utterly confound them in their path over the trackless ocean. Under such circumstances the intercourse of the Anglo-Saxons with foreign nations was necessarily very limited: and countries to which we can now transport ourselves will prove that still not then be visited, unless the traveller was prepared to undergo much hardship and peril.

King Alfred was very desirous to encourage the return to England of foreigners from whom he could obtain any important information. One of these was a Dane. He had attempted to ascertain how far the continent of Europe extended towards the North Pole, and in the effort he had coasted all along the northern coast of Denmark, and ventured among the wild mountains of Norway, and when he came to England he related all that he had seen, and Alfred, as I have observed, inserted the narrative of this voyage in the translation of Orosius, in which we may read it at the present day. A number of other subjects, whose name was Wulfstan, accompanied a voyage to the Baltic and sailed round that sea, and when he returned, he also gave an account to Alfred of all the strange nations whom he had visited, and thus assisted the king in every of the same nature. Other persons were sent by Alfred to various countries, and from them he obtained a description of Bulgaria and Hungary, and Bohemia and Germany, and of the mountains and rivers of those countries, and of the manners by which they were inhabited.

In this manner did Alfred eagerly enquire for knowledge; but he made greater attention for a better system, and in order to help those who were in want. You must know, that in Iceland, on the coast of *Shetland* and *Orkney*, there were many towns and districts peopled

by Syrians, who, though living under the government of the heathen Rajahs, were Christians, and whose ancestors had been settled there from time immemorial. How, and in what manner they first came there, is not exactly ascertained. It is believed by some, that, when the command of preaching the Gospel to all nations was given to the Apostles, St. Thomas fulfilled this precept by journeying to Hindostan; and that these Syrians are descended from the disciples and the faithful by whom he was accompanied. But, at whatever period they may have been placed in India, they continued true and steadfast in the faith. The Hindoos, amongst whom they dwelt, worshipped their hideous idols with many heads and arms, and surrounded by serpents and skulls; but the Syrians had preserved the word of God; and it was a great delight to them, amidst the darkness of surrounding nations, to be able to read the Bible in their

therefore, compelled to journey the whole way by land—a long and toilsome road it must have been. But Swithelm was stout-hearted, and not only bore King Alfred's gifts to India, but returned in safety with the presents which the Hindo-Syrians had sent as tokens of their gratitude; gems, and precious spices of sweet odour. And Alfred's fame was greatly increased by this enterprise.

We are told by Alfred's biographer, that his activity pervaded every department of his government. If it became necessary to provide a fleet fit to encounter the Danish pirates, Alfred's skill improved the building of the vessels. Cities were founded and fortified by Alfred; castles and palaces raised; and whatever, in his estimation, could tend to the comfort, the civilization, or the defence of his people, he sedulously fostered and maintained.

Alfred managed his affairs with much regularity. His revenue was exactly apportioned and allotted; and one clear moiety of the money paid into his treasury was applied in works of charity and piety. He gave eight hours in each day to sleep and refreshment, eight to the affairs of his kingdom, and eight to study and prayer. This arrangement, however, can only have been applicable to the intervals of peace; and few were the years during which he enjoyed such leisure as might enable him to follow the tranquil employments which gladdened his heart. Alfred's body never enjoyed rest or ease. He was afflicted with an excruciating internal disease, which the medical skill of his "leeches" could neither alleviate nor heal. Very frequently he endured the most intense torment; and if the pain chanced to slumber, the transient interval of diminished suffering was embittered by the fear and horror of impending agony. And yet, thus

racked and tortured, he was so supported by the hand which afflicted him, that he never lost the strength of his spirit, or desisted from the task to which he had been called.

Alfred's character, with all these virtues, did not approach to that ideal perfection, which has been sometimes pourtrayed by his panegyrists. Certainly, he began with good intentions, but he did not always bear them in mind; and during the first portion of his reign he was proud, tyrannical, and almost as much hated as he was afterwards beloved. Still, he possessed within him the only germ of real improvement—the consciousness of his own entire insufficiency;—and the same tendency, which, before he yielded to the temptations of authority, had rendered him unwilling to accept the throne, enabled him afterwards to reform from his errors. The adventures and misfortunes which he

It is one of the most instructive lessons to be deduced from Alfred's life, to remark that he did not fall into the snares prepared for him by his taste and intellectual talents. Carried but one step further, his love for splendour might have rendered him an oppressive ruler, grinding the faces of his subjects for the purpose of ministering to his rude magnificence. His poetical taste was as likely to have misled him in various ways. When the harp went round at a festival, the horn of mead or metheglin circulated quite as freely, and the song of the Northmen often became the pretext for intoxication or worse vices. In like manner, the king's great affection for "book latin" might, if unwisely indulged, have induced him to neglect the needful toils of his station, for the baneful luxury of idle study. But Alfred really and truly sought wisdom from her only source; and her varied gifts were employed by him in strict and conscientious furtherance of the duties which he was bound to perform.

The first and most imperative of these duties he well knew to be the establishment of good laws, and the administration of justice. Ethelbert had reduced the traditionary legal customs of the Kentish Jutes into writing. Ina, a king of Wessex, Offa, of Mercia, and other Anglo-Saxon monarchs, had also from time to time promulgated their "Dooms" or Judgments, which they established, fixing definite rules and regulations in the place of uncertain usage. From these statutes, Alfred selected such articles or chapters as appeared most eligible, others he amended, and some were wholly rejected.

Alfred's code, thus produced, differs in no essential respect from the jurisprudence of his predecessors. On

this head we can speak positively ; for the greater part of the laws from whence it was compiled are yet extant ; and all the variations arising from insertion, alteration, or omission, do not, when taken together, afford any peculiar characteristic. Nor can we, upon mere perusal of the text, discover those excellences which so endeared Alfred to the English, that, in after times, all the more important legal institutions were ascribed to his wisdom. The division of England into shires and hundreds,—Trial by Jury,—the *Frankpledge*, or the regulation by which the lower orders of people were formed into companies or bands of ten or more, mutually responsible for each other's appearance, in case any one was accused of a crime—have all been considered as established by Alfred, though he really had no claim to their invention. But the fact is, that if any part of the legal fabric, of which the origin was unknown, possessed peculiar utility, it was supposed to be Alfred's, on the mere strength



pend—respect for established authority—which sudden changes, even for the better, are apt to undermine.

The first principle which appears to have guided Alfred, was a tolerant endurance of institutions, not theoretically perfect, but which could not be altered without the chance of greater evil. He willingly sacrificed the credit of seeming to be wiser than his ancestors. And, instead of confiding in his own talent for legislation, he shrunk from the endeavour of imposing his opinions upon posterity.

The second principle which guided Alfred in his legal government, was an unremitting endeavour to supply any deficiency in the theory of his laws, by the equitable and ready dispensation of them in practice. He directed all his efforts to the just and proper administration of the law in court, rather than to its amendment in the "Doom-book." Alfred was the defender of the fatherless and the widow, protecting the poor against all rapine and oppression. All judgments given by the magistrates, to whom he delegated the power of judicature, were carefully reviewed and examined by him. If he discovered that judgment had been perverted by hatred or malice, or that the scales of justice had been swayed by bribes, he punished the offender with great severity. According to the ancient tradition of London, he even caused forty-four judges, who had given false judgments, to be hanged in one year as murderers. This fact, perhaps, is not warranted by Anglo-Saxon authority, but the vigilance which he exercised is fully testified by Asser, his affectionate biographer; and if the judge had erred, not wilfully and corruptly, but merely from ignorance and neglect, Alfred then reproved him for his fault, and warned him that such conduct would risk the loss

of the authority which he had abused. Thus, instead of introducing new machinery, which, however improved, would not have answered in ignorant hands, he made that which he had work well, by his unremitting care and vigilance.

The third and chief principle which actuated Alfred, was his endeavour to impart the spirit of the law of God to the temporal legislation of his kingdom. Alfred's statutes are prefaced by the Decalogue, to which he has added a selection from the Mosaic precepts, and the canons of the first Apostolic council. "Do these," he continues; "and if these commands be obeyed, no other doom-book will be required." We commonly say that Christianity is a part of the law of the land. Alfred had a clearer perception of the station which religion should possess in a Christian commonwealth. He would have wished to render Christianity the law itself. The necessity for any human law exists simply and solely in

## Chapter X.

*Edward "the Elder"—Succession contested by Ethelwald, Son of Ethelbald—Edward prevails—Ethelfleda, the "Lady of Mercia"—Mercia occupied by Edward—Submission of Northumbria and East Anglia—Danes, Scots, Britons, acknowledge Edward's Supremacy—Athelstane—His Character—His Wars against the Britons—Reduction of West Wales and of the City of Exeter—All Britain south of the Humber submits to him—Sihtric, King of Northumbria, married to Athelstane's Sister—Commutations in Northumbria after the death of Sihtric—Scots and Danes unite against Athelstane—they are defeated in the great Battle of Brunnburgh—Athelstane's reputation—Alliances of his family with foreign Princes—Edgiva married to Charles the Simple, King of France—Expulsion of the Carolingian Dynasty by the Capets.*

UPON the death of Alfred, the succession was contested between his son Edward, usually called Edward the elder, and Ethelwald, the son of Ethelbald (A.D. 901). If the law of primogeniture could have been considered as firmly established, Ethelwald, being the representative of the elder brother, would have been clearly entitled to the throne; but Edward was the son of the king last in possession, and his right was acknowledged by the West Saxons, if not by the other English and Saxon nations. The pretender, however, for so we must call Ethelwald, had a strong party; he took possession of Twineham and Wimburn, and throwing himself into the latter town, he caused the entrances to be secured, and professed that he would either conquer or die. This declaration, however, seems to have been made for the purpose of misleading

his opponents ; for in the course of the night, he stole out of the town, and bent his way towards the host of the Danes in Northumbria. Edward, who had encamped with his army in the neighbourhood, pursued the pretender with all possible speed, but he escaped the chase, and reaching the Danes in safety, they hailed him as their king (A.D. 904-905). Ethelwald had married a nun, contrary to the ecclesiastical law ; and I think it is implied that she had eloped with him out of her convent. This lady, who followed her husband, was pursued with equal pertinacity by Edward, and she also had the good fortune to escape. Ethelwald governed with success and power. He sailed with his fleet unto Essex, and the East Saxons submitted to him. The Danes of East Anglia then joined his standard, and indeed all the English population of "Danelagh" entered heartily into his cause. The Anglo-Saxons inhabiting the provinces

began in Essex, where, as the Chronicle tells us, he "timbered" the Burgh of Witham. This little, dull town was once a Roman station: the walls of the Pretorium may yet be seen; and the expressions employed by the Chronicle seem to shew that Edward's fortifications consisted of a strong stoccade round the ancient line of defences. Here the people submitted to him. Bedford and Northampton followed. After some fluctuations of fortune, he gained Colchester and Maldon; and the result of these conquests was, that all the Danish chiefs south of the Welland, and of East Anglia, and of Essex, and of the adjoining parts, became his vassals, and submitted to him as their lord.

Mercia was equally obedient. Ethelfleda's subjects "turned to him," and accepted him as their sovereign; but the kingdom still continued as distinct from Wessex as it had ever been, though both states were now united under one sovereign. All the kings of the Britons—Howel the good—and Cledauc—and Edwall—became Edward's liege men, and rendered homage, together with all their people. North of the Humber, the same subjection was yielded to Edward by the Danes and the Angles. The Britons of Strathclyde and Cambria, and the men of Galloway, gladly followed their example: the king of the Scots, and all his people, joined in this submission. All accepted him as their "father, lord, and protector," and Edward was now enabled to claim the supremacy of all the various races then inhabiting the island of Britain.

Edward died after a successful and glorious reign, having appointed his son Athelstane as his successor (A.D. 925). The mother of Athelstane was only a shepherd's daughter, and I am much afraid that she was not a

lawful wife, but only a concubine. The name of "Athelstane,"\* signifies "gem," or "precious stone;" and it was, perhaps, given to him on account of his personal beauty. Athelstane was tall and comely; and when he became king, he was accustomed to plait his long flaxen tresses with threads of shining gold. He displayed talents and sense far beyond his years; and if Edward had thus elevated him to the throne, he had obeyed the wishes, or rather the directions of Alfred, who saw in Athelstane the future hopes of Britain.

At a very early age, Athelstane was ennobled by the hand of his grandfather, Alfred, from whom he received the insignia of his honours—a purple robe, a baldrick studded with gems, and the national weapon, the Saxon *seax* or falchion, in a sheath of gold; and from this time, according to the very ancient usages of the Teutons, he enjoyed the rights and privileges of an independent





St. Olav, Norway.



splendour at Kingston-upon-Thames. Kingston was so called, because it was considered peculiarly as being the "*Cynges tun*," or the king's town; and, after the coronation of the Kings of Wessex, they took possession of their kingdom by standing upon a great stone or fragment of rock, which, at no very distant period, was preserved in the churchyard. An ancient chapel, ornamented with the statues of the Anglo-Saxon kings, was a memorial of these inaugurations; but in the last century, 1735, it fell down from sheer old age.

Athelstane encountered some opposition when the nobles of Wessex deliberated upon his recognition, pursuant to his father's will (A.D. 925-926). The leader of this sedition, as it is called, was one Alfred, probably of the royal family, who with his adherents had plotted to seize Athelstane, and to put out his eyes. The conspiracy was detected; but Alfred denied his guilt; and according to the Anglo-Saxon jurisprudence, he was allowed to clear himself by oath, of the accusations laid to his charge. Such proceedings usually took place before a bishop; in this case it was adjudged, on account of the grave nature of the crime, that Alfred should appear before the Pope of Rome, and take the oath in his presence. He did so accordingly; and in the "Basilica" of St. Peter, Alfred solemnly swore that he was innocent. Forthwith, he dropped senseless before the altar, and three days afterwards he died in the English college, a building erected for the reception of the Anglo-Saxon pilgrims or travellers, and which continued to be appropriated to the same purpose, until the sixteenth century.

The sequel of this conspiracy is more lamentable. At a considerable distance of time (A.D. 933), Edwin, the brother of Athelstane, was accused of having combined

with the party or faction of Alfred against the king. In vain did he declare his innocence. Athelstane was resolved upon the death of his brother; and Edwin and his armour-bearer, the latter being also implicated in the accusation, were forced into an old leaky boat, without sail, oar, or rudder; and the crazy bark being pushed out to sea, they were exposed to the fury of the waves. Such a mode of punishment was not uncommon in the middle ages; it appears to have been one of the many modes by which people often attempt to remove from themselves the responsibility of cruel acts, by interposing an intermediate agent. By good fortune, the boat drifted on shore, and the life of the armour-bearer, or esquire, was saved, but the Atheling Edwin, unable to bear up against the horrors of his situation, and dreading the slow torture of hunger, had thrown himself into the sea. Athelstane, when it was too late, discovered that he had been deceived by false witnesses, and during seven years

regain their long-lost liberty, were constantly rising against their invaders. Ill-fated was this opposition to the Saxon power. Athelstane brought all his forces against the inhabitants of Wales; and Edwall Voel, king of Gwynnedd, was soon under the necessity of surrendering his dominions to the conqueror.

Athelstane, however, had too much generosity, and perhaps too much judgment, to deprive the Briton of his dominions. "Better it is," said he, "to make a king, than to be a king;"—and Edwall was restored. But he, and all the other Welsh princes, were compelled to acknowledge themselves as the vassals of Athelstane. Assembled before him, when he held his court at Hereford, they performed homage to the Saxon monarch. A heavy tribute was imposed upon them. Twenty pounds weight of gold, and three hundred pounds of fine silver, were to be paid yearly and every year into the *Hoard* (that is the Anglo-Saxon word) or treasury of the "King of London." Five and twenty thousand beeves were to be driven annually into his pastures. To these were added the swiftest hounds and keenest hawks which a nation of huntsmen could select, as the token of honour and subjection to their superior. And furthermore, it was agreed, that all the territory between the Severn and the Wye, parts of which still appear to have been held by Welsh chieftains, should be wholly united to the Mercian kingdom.

Such was the fate of the kingdoms of Gwynnedd, Deheubarth, and Powys, the modern Principality of Wales, which the Saxons called "North Wales;"\* and we must now turn to the events of "West Wales," where the Britons were still the prevailing people, at least in

\* See Map II.

numbers. In Somerset and Dorset, and part of Damnonia,—as far as the Exe,—the state of the country was like the Welsh Marches, which I have before described, in which the gentry are Englishmen and speak English, while the country-folks are Welsh and speak the Welsh language. Hence the districts which I have mentioned were called the “Wealh cyn,” the “Welsh kind,” or “Wallish-ry.”\* As you approached the west, the Britons retained more power, and the ancient city of Exeter, or “*Caer Isc*,” was inhabited jointly by Britons and by Saxons. When I say that these nations inhabited the city jointly, I do not suppose that Rhys the Briton dwelt in one house in the Cheap, or High Street, and that Brightwyn the Saxon was his next door neighbour; but that Exeter consisted of two Wards, or Divisions, one of which was appropriated to the English or Saxons, whilst the other remained in the possession of the Britons.



Exeter Cathedral.



Anglo-Saxon kings had a crown upon his head, or a sceptre in his hand.

Athelstane having reduced the Britons on the northern banks of the estuary of the Severn, now directed his attacks against the Welsh or Britons of Damnonia, or Devon and Cornwall. The Britons were easily expelled from *Caer Isc*; Athelstane surrounded that city with strong walls and towers built of hewn-stone; and it became a fortress to bridle and overawe his newly acquired territory. All the Damnonians of any consequence were driven beyond the Tamar, into the present county of Cornwall, where they soon sunk into entire subjection to the Anglo-Saxon power. Yet the Britons were so unmixed with their conquerors, that they kept their ancient speech until the reign of Henry VIII., when it gradually became obsolete. In the reign of Queen Anne, it was known only in a few villages near the Land's End. The children, as they grew up, learnt English; and as the old Cornish folks died off, the language gradually expired with them; so that towards the middle of the reign of King George III., one Dolly Pentraeth, an old fishwife, who resided about three miles from Mousehole, near Penzance, was the only surviving individual in the world, who could converse in the tongue of the ancient Damnonian Britons; which tongue, however, she put to a very bad use, since she principally employed it in swearing and grumbling when she could not get a good price for her fish, or in scolding when she was offended.

At the present time, the names of fields and towns, hills and rivers, in Cornwall, are the only memorials of the British language, which extinction cannot be contemplated without sending the heart to regret.

The most useful political virtues arise from an honest feeling of nationality ; and no badge of nationality is more innocent and efficient than the cherished possession of an ancient, and at the same time, peculiar language.

Thus did Britain, south of the Humber, become subject to Athelstane's supremacy ; and we must now view his conquests in the northern regions of the island (A.D. 925-927). Athelstane's disposition seems naturally to have inclined him to peace. He was just in judgment, affable and gracious in his manner, fond of magnificence, and probably of luxury and ease ; and by bestowed one of his sisters in marriage upon Sihtric, King of the Danes, he gave a pledge of concord and amity. In the time of Athelstane, the dominions of the Northumbrian Dane extended as far northward as Edinburgh. Beyond the Frith of Forth dwelt the Scots, whose king, Constantine, was much inclined to cast off the vassalage upon the



received it back in vassalage, and he was also compelled to deliver his son into the power of Athelstane, as a hostage for the true and faithful performance of the conditions which the conqueror imposed. Olave, or, as our historians write his name, Anlaf, another Danish chieftain, had by this time conquered the city of Dublin, and obtained the preponderance over the native chieftains of Ireland. The Eastmen, as these invaders were called by the natives, established themselves firmly on the shores; and Constantine of Scotland, eager to release himself from subjection to Athelstane, excited Anlaf to return to Britain, and regain the territories which Sihtric had held. All the *Cymri* of the north, the Britons of Strathclyde, and Reged, and Cumbria, were ruled by a Scottish prince; and little persuasion was needed to induce them to enter into the confederacy. Edwall, the king of Gwynnedd, was quite as ready. The war cry was heard on every side. The Danish and Norwegian pirates assembled from all points of the horizon, rejoicing in the anticipated slaughter; and a fleet of six hundred and twenty vessels, under the command of Anlaf, all filled with chosen warriors, entered the mouth of the Humber. The "heah-gerefas," or governors, whom Athelstane had placed in the country, were speedily defeated: one was slain, and the survivor escaping with great difficulty, bore the disastrous tidings to the Anglo-Saxon king. In this emergency, Athelstane was not deserted by his accustomed policy and courage. Like a skilful general, he opened negotiations with the enemy, so as to divert their attention, at the same time that he continued his route towards the seat of war.

Athelstane's march was undertaken with such expedition and secrecy (A.D. 938), that his camp was fixed at

Brunnaburgh, in the neighbourhood of the army of Anlaf, before the latter could be aware of his approach. The Dane, thus taken by surprise, was extremely anxious to obtain some information concerning the forces of the Anglo-Saxon kings. Imitating the stratagem of Alfred, he put on the garb of a bard or scald, and with his harp in his hand, he boldly advanced into the leaguer of the enemy. He gained access to the royal presence, without any difficulty. Athelstane was a known patron of these itinerant professors of music and song—he encouraged them with some money and much praise; and he was then sitting at a banquet with his chieftains. Anlaf danced, and harped, and sang; and when the feast was done, a purse well filled with silver groats was slipped into the hand of the disguised invader, as a gracious token that the king was pleased with his performance, and also as a hint that he might withdraw, for Athelstane and his generals were about to hold a council

fought under his standard ; and when Anlaf was fairly out of reach, this warrior repaired to Athelstane, and disclosed the name of his recent visitor. The king reproached him with want of fidelity. "Nay," quoth the honest soldier, "by the same oath of fealty which binds me to thee, O king! was I once bound to Anlaf; and had I betrayed him, with equal justice mightest thou have expected treachery from me. But hear my counsel: whilst awaiting further reinforcements, take away thy tent from the spot upon which it now stands, and thus mayest thou ward off the blow of thine enemy." Athelstane followed this advice, and directed his tent to be pitched in another part of the field, but without disclosing the cause of the removal. In the evening, more troops arrived; and the tent of a bishop was raised on the green-sward which had been occupied by the royal pavilion.

At midnight, a bold and sudden assault was made upon the Anglo-Saxons by the Dane and his army, who surrounded the camp. Anlaf himself, and his most trusty followers, directed the first attack against the tent which had replaced the royal pavilion. The seeming scald had marked the fatal spot with a sure eye;—all within were slain; and, without doubt, he thought he had secured the victory by the death of the Anglo-Saxon king; but the tumult spread—Athelstane sprang from his couch, and rallied and supported the alarmed soldiery, who gathered round him. When the sun arose, the fury of the battle had begun; and the conflict, which lasted throughout the entire day, terminated in the total discomfiture of the enemy. Five kings, and seven northern *Earls* or earls, fell in the strife. The combined army was entirely routed—Constantine the Scot fled to the north,

•

mourning his fair-haired son, who perished in the slaughter. Anlaf, with a sad and scattered remnant of his forces, escaped to Ireland. Athelstane, the "lord of the West Saxons," the "giver of bracelets," was master of the field, and long was the battle of Brunnaburgh sung by the minstrel as the greatest triumph which had been gained by the Angles and the Saxons "since they crossed the broad and stormy sea."

This victory was so decisive, that, during the remainder of the reign of Athelstane, no enemy dared to rise up against him; his supremacy was acknowledged without contest, and his glory extended to distant realms.

Indeed, Athelstane had long held a distinguished station amongst the monarchs of Europe, and his relations with the various continental powers form a very singular and interesting portion of his history. Harold of Norway anxiously sought the friendship of Athelstane, and entrusted his son to the care of the ruler of Britain. Haco was educated in England; by the aid of England he succeeded to the Norwegian throne. He was extolled, and deservedly, for his good government, and the laws of Haco, the "foster son of Athelstane," are the earliest written specimens of the legislation of Scandinavia, and the best proof of the advantages derived by the Norwegian prince from his education at the court of the Anglo-Saxon king.

If ever a national antipathy was strongly marked, it was that which subsisted,—indeed in some measure it still subsists,—between the *Celtic* or *Cymric* nations and the *Saxon* or *English*; yet Athelstane overcame this feeling. The Northmen invaded Armorica; and the Britons of Gaul, flying from their new enemies, took refuge in the land of their ancestors. By Athelstane,

these fugitives were hospitably received ; he became the sponsor of the infant Alan, the grandson of the Breton sovereign ; and, like the Norwegian Haco, the young prince of Armorica grew up in the hall of Athelstane. When he arrived at man's estate, he assembled the emigrant Britons (A.D. 937). A successful expedition placed Alan in possession of Dol and St. Brieu, and this foster son of Athelstane, like his Norwegian contemporary, was re-established upon the throne.

The sisters of Athelstane shared in the estimation acquired by their brother's conduct and success. Otho, the son of Henry, the Emperor of Germany, sought the hand of one of these noble ladies, and another became the consort of Louis, Duke of Aquitaine. These continental Princes might have matched themselves much nearer home, so that some strong and special inducement must have led to their union with the daughters of England.

About this time, France had fallen into a state of great disorder. The descendants of Charlemagne, who still continued to rule both Germany and France, had degenerated as much as those of Clovis (A.D. 887). Charles "le Gros" (*i. e.* the fat) had shown himself so deficient in the meanest of all qualifications of royalty, personal courage, that he was solemnly deposed in the diet of the German empire, and Arnolph, his nephew, elected in his stead. The French nobles followed their example (A.D. 887) ; and Eudo, Count of Paris, being supported by a powerful party, assumed the royal dignity. France, however, was constituted like Anglo-Saxon England. It was not a united kingdom, but a bundle of principalities, communities, and states, governed in tranquil times by one monarch ; and, in times of disturbance, by as many as

mourning his fair-haired son, who perished in the slaughter. Anlaf, with a sad and scattered remnant of his forces, escaped to Ireland. Athelstane, the "lord of the West Saxons," the "giver of bracelets," was master of the field, and long was the battle of Brunneburgh sung by the minstrel as the greatest triumph which had been gained by the Angles and the Saxons "since they crossed the broad and stormy sea."

This victory was so decisive, that, during the remainder of the reign of Athelstane, no enemy dared to rise up against him; his supremacy was acknowledged without contest, and his glory extended to distant realms.

Indeed, Athelstane had long held a distinguished station amongst the monarchs of Europe, and his relations with the various continental powers form a very singular and interesting portion of his history. Harold of Norway anxiously sought the friendship of Athelstane, and entrusted his son to the care of the ruler of Britain. Haco

these fugitives were hospitably received: he became the sponsor of the infant Alan, the grandson of the Breton sovereign; and, like the Norwegian Haco, the young prince of Armorica grew up in the hall of Athelstane. When he arrived at man's estate, he assembled the emigrant Britons (A.D. 937). A successful expedition placed Alan in possession of Dol and St. Brieux, and this foster son of Athelstane, like his Norwegian contemporary, was re-established upon the throne.

The sisters of Athelstane shared in the estimation acquired by their brother's conduct and success. Otho, the son of Henry, the Emperor of Germany, sought the hand of one of these noble ladies, and another became the consort of Louis, Duke of Aquitaine. These continental Princes might have matched themselves much nearer home, so that some strong and special inducement must have led to their union with the daughters of England.

About this time, France had fallen into a state of great disorder. The descendants of Charlemagne, who still continued to rule both Germany and France, had degenerated as much as those of Clovis (A.D. 887). Charles "le Gros" (*i. e.* the fat) had shown himself so deficient in the meanest of all qualifications of royalty, personal courage, that he was solemnly deposed in the diet of the German empire, and Arnolph, his nephew, elected in his stead. The French nobles followed their example (A.D. 887); and Eudo, Count of Paris, being supported by a powerful party, assumed the royal dignity. France, however, was constituted like Anglo-Saxon England. It was not a united kingdom, but a bundle of principalities, communities, and states, governed in tranquil times by one monarch; and, in times of disturbance, by as many as

to the country of her husband's exile. Hugh the Great, by whose influence Raoul had been raised to the royal dignity, possessed so much power, that he was often called "*Rex Francorum*," or King of the French; though he had no real claim to such a title; and as the means of securing his authority, he anxiously sought the friendship and alliance of our Athelstane. He visited London, offering rich gifts,—the sword of Constantine the Great, and the lance of Charlemagne; by which, as it was believed, victory had always been ensured to the fabled emperor of chivalry. Hugh's main object was to obtain one of the sisters of Athelstane in marriage. Hugh probably thought that Athelstane would be inclined to support the pretensions of his nephew, Louis; but that if he, the "*Rex Francorum*," could have another sister of Athelstane sitting by his side as his consort, the Anglo-Saxon king might be inclined to overlook the



They arrived in England—in the presence of Athelstane, they took the oath of fidelity to Louis as their king;—and, accompanied by many Anglo-Saxon prelates and lords, he departed from this country, and took possession of his kingdom. Louis, on account of his long residence in England, acquired the by-name of "*Louis d'Outremer*," or "*Louis from beyond the sea*," and Athelstane's assistance tended greatly to support him against his own people, who never cordially liked him. Whether Athelstane acted justly or not, in thus upholding his nephew, is a question upon which there may be a diversity of opinion; at present I only desire you to consider the fact as a proof of the great power of Anglo-Saxon England.

If we are to decide by the result, the interference was imprudent and ill-judged; for the Carlovingians never really re-established themselves in France. The tree had been torn up so often, that it could not take root again—the French would not submit to the family. And on the death of Louis the Lazy, the grandson of Louis d'Outremer, Hugh Capet, son of Hugh the Great, obtained the royal dignity (A.D. 987).

In our times, these scenes have been renewed, a Louis and a Charles, the descendants of Hugh Capet, have been dwelling amongst us, like those who were driven out by Hugh Capet's ancestors and kinsmen, nine hundred years ago; and whatever may be thought of the causes of their expulsion, it can be hoped that England will be able to bestow a safe refuge for the wanderer, and that her name will be remembered with gratitude.

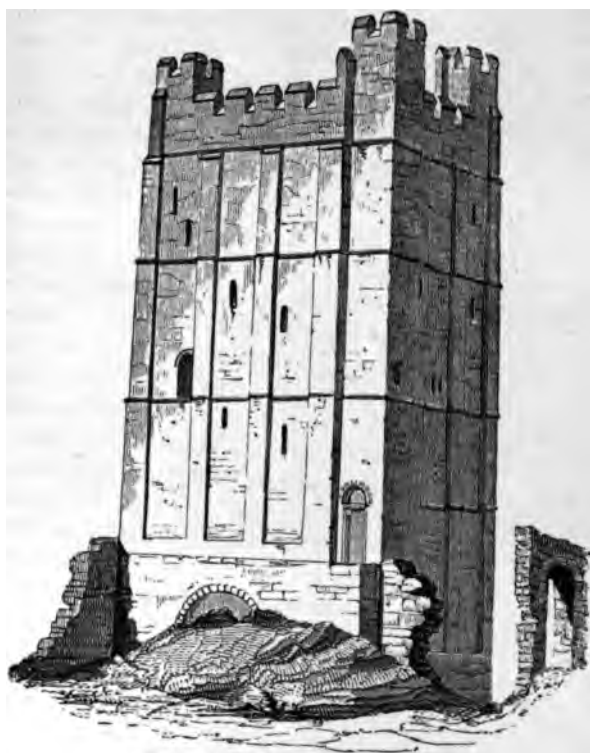
And many a man, who had the traditional recollection of the story of the nephew that he desired to see, had been told that it was

currently believed, that he bestowed great privileges and franchises upon the town of Beverley, saying—

“As free  
Make I thee,  
As heart may think, or eye may see.”

When the good folks of the boroughs began to regard it as conducive to their welfare and importance that they should be able to send members to the House of Commons, Athelstane's charter was pleaded more than once, as the foundation of their parliamentary right; and throughout the west of England there was scarcely a town in which the statue of Athelstane was not erected.

Athelstane's charity probably contributed to his popularity. He directed that each of his royal manors should be subject to an annual charge in favour of the wretched and destitute. The steward, or “Reeve,” was once in every year to redeem a slave from captivity. When



**Keep of Richmond Castle.**



## Chapter XI.

*Edmund—Revolution in Northumbria, which raised Olave to the Throne—Treaty by which Britain was divided between Edmund and his Competitor—Death of Olave—Edmund reduces Northumbria—Cumbria, or Strathclyde—Retrospect of the History of the Cumbrian Britons—Donald, King of Cumbria, expelled by Edmund, and his Kingdom granted to Malcolm—Extinction of the Cumbrian Britons—Death of Edmund—Edred—Constitution of the Anglo-Saxon Empire—Revolt of Northumbria—Eric raised to the Throne—Edred reduces Northumbria, and converts the Kingdom into an Earldom.*

EDMUND the Atheling, son of Edward the Elder, was only eighteen years of age when he succeeded to the throne of his brother Athelstane (A.D. 941).

The submission of the Northumbrians to the direct dominion of Athelstane, had been much against their will. They cast off their allegiance, and sent for Olave, a king of the Eastmen, or Danes, settled in Ireland, to reign over them. Olave, however, seems to have been restored by the will and wishes of the English, as well as of the Danes, for Wulstan, Archbishop of York, was his most powerful supporter, and continued a steady adherent of the independent party to the very last.

Olave immediately began offensive operations. He advanced as far as Tamworth, being supported by the inhabitants of the country adjoining to the Danish burghs (A.D. 942),—though the burghs themselves had been occupied by Edmund,—and stormed the town, losing many of his men in the battle, but gaining much plunder.

Some while afterwards, Edmund besieged Olave and his faithful counsellor Archbishop Wulstan, in the town of Leicester. Olave sallied out of the town by night; and joining some other of his troops, a great battle took place (A.D. 943). Edmund, on his part, was accompanied by Odo, the Archbishop of Canterbury; and a conference having been held between the two prelates, a treaty was effected upon the following terms. Olave was to rule all Britain north of Watling-street; Edmund was to rule the south; and upon the death of either of them, the survivor was to possess the whole empire. By this treaty, therefore, Edmund consented to disinherit his brothers; and the chance of survivorship might have placed all the English nations beneath the supremacy of the Dane. Sad terms these for a descendant of Alfred; and such as must lead us to suppose, either that Edmund was reduced to great straits, or that he was betrayed by his counsellors. Odo was a Dane by birth; the son of one of the chieftains

mediately invaded Northumbria, in which two Danish kinglets, Anlaf and Reginald, were then reigning. How the former had established himself does not exactly appear—whether he had succeeded as a vassal under Olave, or whether he had entered into Northumbria upon Olave's death. As for Reginald, he had confirmed his authority by the grant or surrender of Edmund. These sovereigns could offer no resistance A.D. 944; and the Northumbrians passed again beneath the sceptre of Edmund.

The Britons of Cambria occupy a tolerably large space on the map, but a very small one in history:—their annals have entirely perished:—and existing authentic remains concerning them, except a very few passages, wholly consisting of incidental notices relating to their subjection and their misfortunes. Romance would furnish much more; for it was in Cumbria that Rhydere, or Roderic the Magnificent, is therein represented to have reigned, and Merlin to have prophesied. Arthur held his court in merry Carlisle; and Peredur, the Prince of Sunshine, whose name we find amongst the princes of Strathclyde, is one of the great heroes of the "Mabinogion," or tales of youth, long preserved by tradition amongst the *Cymri*. These fantastic personages, however, are of importance in one point of view, because they show, what we might otherwise forget—that from the Ribble in Lancashire, or thereabouts, up to the Clyde, there existed a dense population, composed of Britons, who preserved their national language and customs, agreeing in all respects with the Welsh of the present day. So that, even in the tenth century, the ancient Britons still inhabited the greater part of the western coast of the island, however much they had been

compelled to yield to the political supremacy of the Saxon invaders.

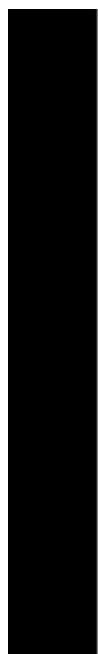
The "Regnum Cumbrense" comprehended many districts, probably governed by petty princes or *Reguli*, in subordination to a chief monarch, or *Pendragon*. Reged appears to have been somewhere in the vicinity of Annandale. Strathclyde\* is, of course, the district or vale of Clydesdale. In this district, or state, was situated Alcluyd, or Dunbritton, now Dumbarton, where the British kings usually resided; and the whole Cumbrian kingdom was not unfrequently called "Strathclyde," from the ruling or principal state; just as the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland is often designated in common language as "England," because England is the portion where the monarch and legislature are found. Many dependencies of the Cumbrian kingdom extended into modern Yorkshire, and Leeds was the frontier town between the Britons and the





Dumbarton Castle Gate.

Page 146.



protection in Wales or the marches, where, as it is said, they regained some of the lands which had been occupied by the Mercians. After the destruction of Alcluyd, these Britons were governed by kings of the Scottish line, who, probably, acquired their rights by intermarriage with a British princess; and Eugenius, or Owen, one of these rulers, was engaged, together with Constantine, King of the Scots, against Athelstane, in the great battle of Brunnaburgh.

The Kings of Cumbria became the vassals, or "men," of the Anglo-Saxon kings. Eugenius had thus submitted to Athelstane. Of the nature of the obligation, I shall speak hereafter. The Anglo-Saxon kings appear to have been anxious to extend and confirm their supremacy; Edmund proceeded against Donald, or Dumnail, the Scottish King of Cumbria (A.D. 945), with the most inveterate and implacable hostility. He called to his aid his other vassal, Leoline, or Llewellyn, King of South Wales; and leading this British force against other Britons, he expelled Donald, their Scottish prince, from his Cumbrian kingdom. The sons of Donald were blinded by the command of Edmund; and a cairn, still called "Dumnail Raise," on the borders of Westmoreland and Cumberland, is supposed to mark the spot where the battle was decided, and the victory abused. Possibly the conqueror may have been exasperated by some recent act of treachery on the part of Donald; perhaps the violation of the fealty which the vassal had formerly promised may have been the alleged cause of the war. Edmund having thus obtained possession of Cumbria, granted the country to Malcolm, King of the Scots, upon condition, as the chronicles say, of being his co-operator, both by sea and by land. In other words,

Malcolm was bound to fight Edmund's battles, and to assist him with his forces whenever required; it being an old usage in diplomacy, even amongst rude nations, to conceal any onerous or disagreeable stipulation by civil and courtly language.

Fordun, the ancient Scottish chronicler, adds, that Malcolm, by the assent of Edmund, immediately made a *subinfeudation* or grant of Cumbria to Indulf, the "Tan-aist" or heir-apparent of the Scottish crown, to the intent that the province should be governed as an apanage, until the prince should be called to the throne; and that it should thus descend from heir to heir—due fealty being rendered for the same to the English crown. And the Scottish chronicler also states, that when Constantine bestowed Cumbria upon Eugenius, this mode of succession had been established by his decree. The relations between the Kings of the Scots and the Kings of England are amongst the most litigated portions of

separate race. Yet it is most probable that this process was not wholly completed until a comparatively recent period. The "Wallenses," or Welsh, are enumerated by David the Lion amongst his subjects; and the laws or usages of the *Brets* or Britons continued in use until abolished by Edward I., at the period when Scotland, by his command, appeared, by her representatives, in the English parliament at Westminster (A.D. 1304). In the bishopric of Glasgow, comprehending the greatest portion of the ancient Cumbrian kingdom, the "barbarous" British speech generally gave way to that dialect of the Saxon English, which is called lowland Scottish, about the thirteenth century; but in some secluded districts the language is thought to have lingered until the Reformation, when it was possibly destroyed by the ministration of the protestant clergy. In our English Cumberland and the adjoining Westmoreland, a few British traditions yet survive among the people. Pendragon Castle reminds the traveller of the fabled Uther. Some of the mountains which adorn the landscape retain the appellations given to them by the original population; and "Skiddaw" and "Helvellyn" now rise, as the sepulchral monuments of a race which has passed away.

Edmund "the Magnificent" would probably have equalled the fame of his progenitors; but in the year which ensued after the conquest of Cumbria, he fell by the hands of an assassin. The anniversary, or mass-day, of St. Augustine, was a great festival amongst the English; and then (A.D. 946), as now, according to a habit which is not the more praiseworthy because it is ancient, the holyday was rendered unholy by debauch and revelry. Edmund and his company being hot with wine, he dis-

cerned amongst the guests one Leof, who had been banished or outlawed for some offence. The sight of this man roused the king to extreme anger. Edmund started from his seat, threw himself upon Leof, and clutching him by his long hair, flung him to the ground. Leof grappled with the king, and drawing his dagger, stabbed his opponent with a mortal thrust.

Upon the death of Edmund, his brother Edred succeeded to the "fourfold empire of the Anglo-Saxons and Northumbrians, Pagans and Britons." This is the style which Edred assumes in his charters; and the titles are important, as showing the form into which the government had settled. Mercia and Wessex, with their dependencies, composed a dominion now considered as the proper state of the Anglo-Saxons or English. Northumbria constituted another kingdom. The pagan kingdom must be sought in the dominions possessed by such of the Danish chieftains as had not embraced

states, was virtually independent of the other members. They were aggregated under one crown, but they were not welded together ; and, with the exception of Wessex, all were more or less hostile to the "Basileus"—for the Anglo-Saxon monarchs assumed this Byzantine title—who asserted his authority over the heterogeneous assemblage of tribes and nations forming his empire.

The theory of the constitution, such as it was, appears to have required that the "Basileus" should receive a distinct recognition of his authority in each of the leading or dominant states. The minor states tacitly consented to be bound by the acts of the more important powers ; and, on the whole, after deducting the differences between a rude and disturbed people, and a more settled and civilized country, Britain was not unlike Spain at the accession of Charles V.—Castile was the more important and leading state ; but the rights of the monarch to the crown of Aragon and the seignory of Biscay were distinct from the title to Castile ; and the recognition by the Cortes of each of these ancient states, was the legal foundation of the authority which the king enjoyed. I bring these facts before you as clearly as I can, because nothing is so common as the supposition that the kingdoms of the so-called *Heptarchy* became thoroughly incorporated into one kingdom, before the Conquest. But this theory is erroneous. It was not until after the Conquest that England really became one kingdom, governed by one king, and possessing one supreme legislature ; and the false consequences deduced from the mistaken supposition of their earlier union perplex the whole course of our history.

Edred's empire thus consisted, not of a united kingdom, but of an aggregate of states, standing side by side

of treaty, and Edred was accepted  
monarch, from the Humber to 1

These oaths, however, were the  
best intention of adhering to the  
as Edred had quitted the coun-  
place (A.D. 947). If Archbishop  
this conspiracy, he fomented an  
Eric, the Northman, was elevated

Edred, wasting away under the  
ease which brought him to an earl,  
was weak and puny in body, but  
vigorous in mind. He raised his  
Northumbria. The country was pl  
without pity or mercy; and among  
tation, the Minster which good St.  
Ripon, was set on fire and destroyed  
important, because it shows the fier  
hostility; the "pagans" could not  
When Edred returned homewards fr  
the Anglo-Saxon army was attacked  
brians. Eric, by a secret and rapid  
the van-guard of



the deposed monarch, together with his son and brother. This murder took place at Steinmore, and Eric fell by the hands, or at least by the contrivance, of Maccus, a Norwegian chieftain, and of Osulf, an earl, who must have been among the chief of those by whose suffrages Eric had been promoted to the royal dignity. Edred was now again King of Northumbria, but the country continued as unsettled as before. Another Danish chieftain assumed the royal title. (A.D. 952-954), and Archbishop Wulstan continued to plot against the government of Wessex. Edred acted with his usual decision and promptitude. Archbishop Wulstan's clerical dignity might protect him against capital punishment, but his person was not sacred against the law; he was arrested, and cast into prison at Jedburgh, and ultimately removed from Northumbria. Wulstan was translated to a lower step in the hierarchy, and the unruly Archbishop of York passed the remainder of his life as Bishop of Dorchester, in Oxfordshire, where he could do no further harm. The Danish rulers of Northumbria had hitherto been allowed to use the title of "king," and the rebellions which I have briefly noticed were principally excited by the efforts made by these kings to throw off the allegiance due to the crown of Wessex. This form of government was abolished by Edred; and, instead of creating a king, and allowing the country to subsist as a *kingdom*, the name of the dominion was altered, and the *earldom* of Northumbria was intrusted to Osulf, by whom Eric had been slain.

## Chapter XII.

*Accession of Edwy—Alteration in the aspect of Anglo-Saxon History—Dunstan—His Character and Influence—Celibacy of the Clergy—Establishment of the Benedictine Order—Disensions between the partisans of the Monks and the Secular or married Clergy—Elgiva—Dunstan's intemperate conduct—He is banished from England—The Monkish Factions occasion a Revolt in favour of Edgar—Edwy deprived of his Dominions north of the Thames—Cruel treatment of Elgiva—Death of Edwy—Accession of Edgar—Promotion of Dunstan to the Archbishopric of Canterbury—Edgar's bounty to the Clergy—His Government—Edgar's Triumph on the Dege—Origin of the Feudal System—Tenures of Land—Earls—Aldermen—Edgar's Feudal Supremacy—Division of Northumbria—Lothian granted to Kenneth—Defects of Edgar's Character.*

EDRED, who had been rapidly declining in strength, died soon after the reduction of Northumbria (A.D. 955), without leaving any children; and his nephew, the young Edwy, then not exceeding fifteen years of age, succeeded to the Empire. He was speedily "chosen," as the phrase ran, in Wessex, his own proper dominion. Mercia also acknowledged him, and the "Emperor of the Anglo-Saxons and Northumbrians, Ruler of the Pagans, and Protector of the Britons," appears to have been recognised without opposition in the other states of the empire. At the same time, Edgar, the brother of Edwy, became a sub-regulus, or vassal-king, under his supremacy. This fact, which is of some importance, is proved, like many other points of a similar description,



**Norman Vessel.**

**Page 191.**



**Roman Gates of Chester.**

**Page 300.**

## Chapter XII.

*Accession of Edwy—Alteration in the aspect of Anglo-Saxon History—Dunstan—His Character and Influence—Celibacy of the Clergy—Establishment of the Benedictine Order—Dissensions between the partisans of the Monks and the Secular or married Clergy—Elgiva—Dunstan's intemperate conduct—He is banished from England—The Monkish Factions occasion a Revolt in favour of Edgar—Edwy deprived of his Dominions north of the Thames—Cruel treatment of Elgiva—Death of Edwy—Accession of Edgar—Promotion of Dunstan to the Archbishopric of Canterbury—Edgar's bounty to the Clergy—His Government—Edgar's Triumph on the Dee—Origin of the Feudal System—Tenures of Land—Earls—Aldermen—Edgar's Feudal Supremacy—Division of Northumbria—Lothian granted to Kenneth—Defects of Edgar's*



Norman Vessel.

Page 194.



Roman Gates of Chester.

Page 209.









not by historians, but by a charter. The document does not designate the locality of the dominions assigned to Edgar, but it is most probable that Mercia was thus bestowed upon him as an apanage.

In the earlier portions of our history, if we except the kings, we have little personal acquaintance with any of the actors who appear on the scene. In a monarchy, the king is naturally considered as the most prominent personage; but those who stand beside the throne, and still more those who are concealed behind it, are very frequently of much more real importance than the prince arrayed in all the insignia of royalty; and the annals of the era into which we have now entered, furnish us with a satisfactory portrait of the individual who, throughout many reigns, must be considered as the leading and master spirit of the Anglo-Saxon empire.

Dunstan, Abbot of Glastonbury, had, at an early period of his life, been admitted into that ancient monastery, which was then also a school or college. Glastonbury was principally filled by Scots, or monks from Ireland. They were the most learned men of the age; but the defects of the stern and moody Celtic spirit were enhanced rather than regulated by mystic and ascetic piety: and the place itself was such as to encourage every dream of devotion or romance. Joseph of Arimathea, as the legends taught, had founded the holy fane in the fated isle of Avalon. Here was the burial-place of Arthur, the last of the British monarchs—if indeed Arthur was dead, and not entranced in fairy bower. A British population still lingered in the surrounding country; the inmates had repaired to the Abbey from the remotest parts of the west; and Glastonbury was the central point, which commanded the veneration of

the Scots, the Cymri, and the English, the three great nations of the isle of Britain.

The poetical legends which Dunstan heard in this domicile became so familiar to him, that, in after life, he was accused of too great a proficiency in the magical songs of the olden time. As a child, he was singularly weak and delicate in body, but his talent was almost preternaturally active.

When very young, his intense application to study brought on an attack of fever : his strength failed, and his companions and teachers thought they beheld him on the bed of death. Suddenly Dunstan arose, apparently entranced, and directed his steps towards the church of the monastery ; the great doors were closed : but by some other entrance he ascended a flight of stairs which led to the roof. He proceeded cautiously along the beams, and dropped unhurt into the aisle below. Dunstan recovered, and when restored to health, he related

diminish his singular and almost unexampled acuteness, activity, and industry. Dunstan possessed not only all the learning and all the science, but all the accomplishments of the age. In the arts—a Royal Academician of the present day will smile if I call them the *fine arts*—he particularly excelled : Dunstan was a sculptor, a painter, and a calligraphist : he could work with equal facility in the hardest and most ductile metals, in steel or in gold. But music constituted his chief delight : he struck the harp which he had made : and if, as we are told in the legend, the strain burst forth from its chords when untouched by hand, we may suppose that his mechanical skill had enabled him to produce the melody, by some of those contrivances now familiar to us, but of which the effect might then be ascribed to supernatural power.

In his earlier youth, Dunstan had been introduced at the court of Athelstane by his uncle, Athelm, Archbishop of Canterbury. Dunstan was of noble, or rather of royal lineage, for he was related to the king, and he won great favour by his musical talent and general knowledge.

His growing favour excited the enmity of some of the courtiers. They defamed him to Athelstane, and insinuated that the young student of Glastonbury was a sorcerer. Dunstan soon perceived that he had lost the good-will and favour of his sovereign—his high spirit could not brook any affront : and rather than be warned away from court by the knitted brow of Athelstane, he determined at once to quit the palace. The disgrace and departure of the favourite did not satisfy his enemies. They plotted against Dunstan, and lay in ambush for him ; when he came up, they surrounded him, drove away his servants, pulled him off his horse,

bound him hand and foot, trampled on him, and threw him into a marshy pool. Here Dunstan was found by some passengers, who carried him to an adjoining village, where he was nursed until he recovered from the effects of the assault which he had sustained.

Dunstan repaired to his uncle, the archbishop, who exhorted him to become a monk. This the young man resolutely refused. He had become attached to a very beautiful maiden, his equal in rank and station, and whom he wished to marry. In this wish there was nothing but what was honourable and good. Had Dunstan followed his inclination, had he wedded his beloved, and settled in his paternal halls, the weakness of his constitution would have prevented him from following the trade of war. His knowledge and love of art, affording him sufficient resources within himself, would have preserved him from the ruder vices of his contemporaries, and he would have presented an example most

The young monk had nothing left in life, and he sought a living grave. The ordinary austerities of the cloister did not suffice to Dunstan, for the miserable man was in that state of affliction when corporal sufferings relieve the agony of the mind; the stimulus of bodily pain diverting the attention from the more intense torture of the soul. Dunstan built a hut by the side of the church, in which he enclosed himself. The cell was five feet in length, and two and a half wide, and it only rose four feet above the ground; but he had excavated the earth so far, as to enable himself to stand upright, though he could never lie down. In this sepulchre he abode, denying himself rest as well as needful food. He fasted to the point of starvation, constantly working at his forge when not employed in prayer. The hammer was always sounding, except when silenced by his orisons.

There is little reason to marvel at the return of Dunstan's partial insanity during his seclusion. He imagined himself assailed by the foul fiend, and he related his adventures; but in all other matters he was as shrewd and sensible as ever. His fame spread, and votaries from far and wide flocked to him. Dunstan now occasionally came out of his sooty den; and when Edmund ascended the throne, he invited Dunstan to court, in order that he might be at the head of the peers and palatine officers—or, as we should say, that he might be prime minister of the kingdom.

Dunstan immediately accepted the offer, or rather obeyed the command. He thus acted, as he said, in conformity with the precept of the apostle, "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers;" and to the end that he might be enabled to establish the empire of righteousness and justice.

We may fully admit Dunstan's sincerity. Riches he utterly despised—when in his cell, he bestowed the whole of his ample patrimony, as well as the other great property which he acquired by bequests, upon the monastery. He had mortified his flesh, subdued his appetites and passions; and, from a deep sense of duty, however mistaken, he had abandoned that which was dearest to him in the world. But this painful process had left terrible effects behind; his heart was now seared against all those affections and feelings of humanity, which connect us with our fellow creatures, and afford the best means of testifying our love toward our common father. His mind was narrowed to the compass of his order; and the single object of his existence was, the establishment of the Benedictine rule and the extension of the Papal power.

The Popes of Rome were, about this time, most earnest in compelling the celibacy of the clergy. In the

Lands had been granted to the clergy for their maintenance. A married priesthood would soon have degenerated into a caste of sacerdotal nobility, holding their lands as a patrimonial inheritance, by the nominal condition of serving at the altar, but neglecting, in fact, every duty which they were charged to perform.

At an earlier period, this state of things had been sufficiently realised in Northumbria, to show the nature and extent of the imminent danger by which the church was threatened. If the system had prevailed, the spiritual ministration of religion would have been debased; the temporal advantages resulting to the community from the establishment of Christianity would have been wholly destroyed; therefore, we can well suppose, that many thinking men, honestly anxious for the real interests of religion, would labour for the prevention of such an abuse. Most closely connected with this question of celibacy, was the introduction of the Benedictine rule among the monks of England. Before Dunstan's time, each congregation of recluses lived according to its own internal regulations, nor were the several monasteries consolidated into one community. A Roman of the name of Benedict, a man of sincere piety, had introduced a new code into the monastery which he founded upon Monte Cassino, in the ancient territory of the Samnites (A.D. 529). Amongst much that was trifling, it contained more that was well adapted to increase the utility of the monastic life, and to restrain its vices, being particularly adapted to prevent the cloister from becoming a nestling place of sloth and profligacy. These monasteries, upon the continent, had united into one corporation. The Benedictines of Italy were members of the same body as the Benedictines of Gaul. They

were exempted from the jurisdiction of the bishops, and placed under a "general" of their own; and they soon became the ready instruments of papal ambition.

The great object sought by the Popes was the suppression of the independence of the different national churches of Christendom; and the celibacy of the clergy became a party badge—a pledge of submission to the Church of Rome, if yielded,—a token of hostility, if refused. And in this spirit of conquest did Dunstan, and those who co-operated with him, engage in the plans which they pursued.

The Scottish or Irish, and Pictish and British churches, though in communion with Rome, were still independent of the Papal See. The Anglo-Saxon church was more inclined towards subjection, and the Benedictine rule had been introduced at Glastonbury. Yet the opposition was very strong: all dissension is contagious—the disputes amongst the clergy were espoused by the



The king could not nominate the abbot as heir to the throne ; but Edred could bequeath all his property and treasures to Dunstan. Edwy, on the other hand, who had been taught to consider himself as having been unjustly excluded from the throne during the reign of his uncle, was naturally disinclined towards Edred's counsellors, and Dunstan was very soon placed in collision with the new king.

Edwy was a youth of singular beauty, but vain, rash, petulant, profligate, and surrounded by a host of young courtiers, all encouraging and emulating the vices of their master. Acting by their advice, Edwy imposed unjust taxes upon his subjects (A.D. 957) : he spoiled the clergy, and treated his own grandmother with great contumely. Edwy was married to a very lovely woman, named Elgiva. On the day of his coronation, whilst the nobles were banquetting and carousing, the king quitted the hall, and retired to an inner chamber with his wife and her mother Ethelgiva. There was some real or supposed stain upon the character of Elgiva ; and Dunstan, deputed by the nobles for the purpose of inducing Edwy to rejoin the revellers, rushed into the chamber, and addressed the queen and her mother in the most brutal language, threatening the latter with the gallows. The ancient biographers of Dunstan, who extol him as a faultless hero, do not give the slightest intimation that this lady, whatever her demerits may have been, had been guilty of any crime punishable by the temporal law ; we are, therefore, fully justified in asserting that Dunstan's language was merely the ebullition of rage and passion, and his conduct towards Edwy was of the same tenor. The monk dragged his sovereign by main force off his seat, and led him into the hall ; and

thus, shamed and disgraced, was Edwy compelled to reappear before his assembled nobility.

The insulted youth, however, was still a king: he could avenge himself upon the man by whom he had been thus outraged. Dunstan was banished from Britain; and the monks of whom he was the leader shared in his proscription: they were driven out of their monasteries and exiled like their patron. This act, without doubt, rendered Edwy the protector of the secular clergy, and the married clerks entered in triumph into Dunstan's own monastery of Glastonbury. Dunstan fled to Ghent, and took refuge in the monastery of St. Peter in that city, even thus escaping with difficulty from the vengeance of Ethelgiva, for she despatched emissaries after him, who, if they had caught him, would have put out his eyes.

It is said in Dunstan's legend, that when he was compelled to quit his abbey, a loud fiendish laugh resounded

of Maidens," the modern Edinburgh, Edwy was deprived of all authority.

The fate of Edwy in his own kingdom of Wessex remains to be told. By the command of Archbishop Odo he was compelled to abandon Elgiva. She was seized in the king's palace by the knights and soldiers of the prelate. They branded and scarred her face with a red-hot iron, and caused her to be transported to Ireland, probably as a slave. From this wretched exile she returned to Edwy. They were pursued by their armed adversaries, and were taken near Gloucester. By the retainers of Odo she was cruelly mangled, so that within a few days afterwards she expired in great torture. Edwy soon afterwards died by the sword, or by the effects of sorrow and despair (A.D. 958); and Edgar was now accepted as monarch of Wessex, and as ruler of the whole empire.

Dunstan had already returned in triumph, as soon as Mercia and Northumbria separated from Wessex; and Edgar, then sixteen years of age, placed himself entirely in the hands of the party by whom he had been raised to the throne. Dunstan was promoted to the sees of Worcester and London, which he held conjointly, and soon afterwards to the primacy of Canterbury. In the latter see, there had been a quick succession. Odo died soon after the accession of Edgar: his successor, Elay, was frozen to death whilst crossing the Alps. In the place of the latter, one Brithelm, Bishop of Sherborne, was elected, a man of singular humility, gentleness, and modesty. It is stated that he was deficient in proper energy for the correction of the clergy, or, in other words, that he did not cordially enter into the plans of Dunstan. Edgar compelled Brithelm to resign the archbishopric and go back to Dorsetshire,—and who could

be the new Archbishop but the learned Dunstan?—With the Archbishopric of Canterbury Dunstan retained the Bishopric of London; Rochester was added. Nothing could be more incompatible with the proper spirit of the church than such an accumulation of pluralities; but the ambition which prompted Dunstan to solicit them, enabled him to retain his preferments, and to avail himself of all the influence which they bestowed.

Dunstan, the Wolsey of his age in power, but not like Wolsey in his fall, became the chief of the counsellors of the young king. Another was Oswald, a Dane by birth, the nephew of Odo, and who obtained the Bishopric of Worcester by the influence of Dunstan; for he had been contented to resign this see, upon his promotion to the archbishopric. The third was Bishop Athelwold, equally the creature of Dunstan, who promoted him to the see of Winchester.

Unquestionably these were all men of talent, and under their guidance, Edgar attained great temporal prosperity. The successes of his reign may fairly be ascribed to their counsels; for, considering Edgar's youth, we must in great measure attribute his acts to the suggestion of Dunstan and of the cabinet which Dunstan had formed. Hence, we may judge that, as ministers, they executed their office with honesty and ability; and the reputation which they thus fairly earned, enabled them the better to carry into effect their plans for the reformation of the clergy. Armed with the delegated authority of the head of the Latin Church, supported and defended by the king,—for Edgar was entirely one with them in heart and hand,—they proceeded with the utmost energy and decision.

The married clergymen, who refused to separate from

their wives, were driven out by main force. Some, perhaps, were bribed into compliance by the king's bounty. As soon as a body of monks was established in any given church, large and ample donations were bestowed upon the new colony. Such of the old English monks as had not yet received the Benedictine rule, were induced to fraternize with Monte Cassino, either by approbation of the real merits of the system—for merits it certainly had—or in order to conciliate the king. During the Danish invasions and the consequent troubles, many of the endowments of the monasteries had been seized or acquired by the nobles and other laymen. Edgar often succeeded in persuading these persons to restore the property, which they could not hold with a good conscience. In other instances, if a stubborn "Thane" resisted the persuasions of the monarch, and had made up his mind to despise the anathemas denounced against the usurpers of church property, Edgar purchased the land with his own money, and restored it to the church. By these means, before the close of the reign of Edgar, forty-eight opulent Benedictine monasteries of monks and nuns were established in Anglo-Saxon Britain; and these subsisted until the era fatal to all similar foundations.

Edgar the Pacific, as he was called, gave a greater extent and majesty to the Anglo-Saxon dominion than any Bretwalda had hitherto obtained. Peace, it was believed, had been prophesied to him by Dunstan, and peace certainly prevailed. A combat with the Britons, faintly indicated, is the only sign of war which can be traced in the annals of his reign. Yet such obedience was rendered to Edgar as no sovereign of Britain had ever claimed before. Circumnavigating the island with

a fleet, whose numbers are said to have amounted to five thousand vessels, he led his mighty force to the city of Chester, where the vassals of the Anglo-Saxon crown had assembled pursuant to his behest.

And who are these who come before the throne of Edgar, the "Basileus," or "Emperor" of Albion? Kenneth, King of the Scots; Malcolm, the son of Kenneth, King of the Cambrians; Maccus the Dane, King of Mona, and of the Southern Isles, or Hebrides. These are followed by the kings of the Britons, Dyfnwall, Siferth, and Edwall; the train continues to approach, and the kings of Galloway and "Westmere" stand amidst their compeers. Kenneth kneels before Edgar—he joins his hands in the humble attitude which, in the present day, is considered as denoting supplication or prayer; and by repeating the declaration,—“I become your man,”—he acknowledges his subjection to the Anglo-Saxon sovereign. The oath of fealty must now





Page 209

ster Cathedral.



helm : each of the royal vassals plies at his oar ; and, with Edgar as steersman, they reach the adjoining monastery of St. John's. Mass is sung : after divine service has been celebrated, the barge rows down the Dee to the palace ; and Edgar, when he enters his hall, addresses his nobles, and exclaims, that his successors may hereafter well call themselves kings, since he will bequeath to them such honour and glory.

The triumph of Edgar belonged to himself alone ; it was never repeated,—but the oaths of fidelity thus taken by the vassals, and their military obligations, constitute two of the elements of *feudality*—an institution of a very complex nature, and of which the origin must be sought in the union of Teutonic custom and Roman law.

Upon this subject I must offer a few observations. The Feudal System is one of the most important passages in the history of the middle ages. Feudality became so interwoven with the policy of the principal kingdoms, that, unless the student understand its nature, he cannot advance a step in historical knowledge. And the state of landed property, in general, must be considered literally, as the ground upon which the real history of nations is founded.

In the Anglo-Saxon treatise of Elfric, before noticed, a passage occurs, to the following effect : “ Every throne which standeth aright, standeth upon three pillars—the Priest, the Warrior, and the Labourer. The priest prayeth day and night for the welfare of the people ; the warrior defendeth the people with his sword ; the labourer tilleth the earth, and worketh for the livelihood of all. And if any one of these three pillars be broken, the throne will be overturned.” From the nature of the materials of history, the palace, the cathedral, and

the castle, will always be the most prominent features in the picture ; and we are therefore apt to forget, that the indwellers of these proud and towering structures, ultimately depend upon the cottage and the barn. All worldly wealth is derived from the fulness of the earth ; and it is by the weal or woe of the peasant, that the prosperity of nations is principally to be defined. The importance of appreciating the real situation of the cultivator may be best illustrated by very homely imagery. Supposing that to-morrow, each and every man in England, from the queen downwards, were to be deprived, by the wand of a magician, of breakfast, dinner and supper, without a coat to his back, or a bed to lie on ; in this case, it is very certain that all affairs would come to a stand. Of course such a state of things, as to the whole nation, is impossible : but it always must exist with respect to a part of the community. So long as the hungry bellies are in the

older and wiser, they will find more real pleasure in such facts, than in the most brilliant fictions of romance. I must now return to feudality.

The homage, or "becoming your man," was an obligation which the Germans brought with them from their forests. It was a fruit of the old oak, though somewhat matured, if I may use the expression, by cultivation. The lord was the protector of the "man," who, on his part, was bound to attend the superior to whom he had "commended" himself, both in peace and in war. The price of this engagement might be a steed or a helmet, a shield of silver, or a purse of gold; and its duration was originally limited to the joint lives of the contracting parties. If the lord died, his son could not claim the submission of the vassal. On the other hand, if the vassal died, his child might choose any other lord. But he was bound, whilst the compact subsisted, to take his place in the hall of his superior, and to fight beneath his banner when it was unfurled; and so imperative was this obligation, that the vassal who abandoned his sovereign in the conflict, rendered himself liable to capital punishment.

As society advanced, and its different relations became more firmly established, there was a strong tendency to render this kind of obligation hereditary. The son of the lord endeavoured to stand in the place of his father, and the son of the vassal often found it convenient to claim the protection which his ancestor had received. And this tendency was much increased, when the remuneration, by which the lord purchased the services of his vassal, was made, not in moveables or personal property, but in land. Amongst the "old Saxons" and other Teutonic nations, so long as they continued in their

primitive state, such a price could not have been paid, because land was an article in which no one man had a distinct and separate property. The district inhabited by each sept or clan, which in the Alemannic language was called the "*Gau*,"\* belonged to the people collectively, or in a body, exactly in the same manner as the hunting-grounds of the Red Men of America are held by each tribe. This mode of possession does not by any means exclude the strict idea of property; for every one of the miserable Cherokees and Osages who have been devoured by the grasping tyranny of the white aristocracy of the United States, is as sensible that he is entitled to the land of his fathers, as is the citizen of New York that he has the lawful property of his store in the Broadway. But at the same time, such an occupation of the soil does not afford to any one individual the means of retaining or enjoying any portion of land, apart

have escaped enclosure. In some parts of the country there were "shifting acres." John Spring was entitled to an acre in Cowholme mead: but this year he has it by the river side; and next year, by the side of the parson's close. In other manors, the plots of land in the common field were pointed out by mere-stones, and each was known by its peculiar mark. On some particular anniversary, a number of apples, each scored with a field-mark, were put into a hat, and drawn out by a boy on behalf of the several tenants, entitled by custom to the land; and each took his share according to the lot. In Norfolk, there was a custom, that after harvest, and until sowing-time in the following year, all the fields were thrown into common; the cattle ranging in full freedom over the whole township, without impediment or counter-claim.

Further lessons were soon learnt. The *Liuti* took their donations, as the lands were measured out by the Cæsar whom they served. And when the Germanic nations, such as the Franks, became the conquerors of a Roman province, they availed themselves of all the advantages of civilization. The Roman senator slunk out of his villa, and was contented to vegetate in the portion of the estate, usually one third, which was left to him by his ugly guest; and the "guest,"—for thus these unwelcome visitors civilly called themselves—plucked the grapes, and reaped the corn upon the remainder. The history of landed property is a subject of much perplexity, and very mainly so, in consequence of the great difficulty of disentangling the Teutonic customs from the Roman laws. It is sufficient to observe, that whatever the Germanic nations adopted, they adopted coarsely and clumsily. To repeat my architectural simile, they

confused the details, and frequently connected discordant members. These are so jumbled and so rudely copied, that at first sight they appear to constitute an original style; but, if minutely examined, we can easily detect their prototype. This clumsy billited moulding has been suggested by the dentals of the Vitruvian cornice; for that thistle-capped capital, the pattern must be sought in the Corinthian Acanthus—that disproportioned base has been chiselled from the Doric of the Colosseum; and all are arranged upon a ground plan, of which no Roman would have dreamed.

Thus, the grants of land to the Roman veterans, of which I have before spoken, and sometimes called “Benefices,” furnished one of the leading principles which the barbarians adopted; namely, that the soldier was to be rewarded by a territorial donation; and from the first establishment of the Franks in Gaul, we find

the clergy upon condition of performing divine service in the chancel, just as the soldier obtained his "benefice" upon condition of performing military service in the field.

Lands which the barbarians held freed and discharged from all conditions, were called *Allodes*.\* Their jurisprudence always inclined in favour of possession, which, according to the common proverb, is nine points of the law; and when Good Title has to recover his lands from Holdfast, Holdfast has always the best chance of remaining *in statu quo*. And it seems to have been a general principle, that if a father, and his son, and his grandson, were able to maintain possession of the land, free of rents or services, they were entitled to keep it against all the world. In a "benefice," however, it was considered that the person who held the territory, and whom we therefore call the tenant, had only the use and enjoyment of the lands, whilst the absolute property was always in the lord or the person by whom the benefit was granted. As a benefice was frequently prayed for by the dependant, it was also called a *Precaria*; and since the enjoyment only was granted, it was said to be land lent, or shortly, a *Præstita*, that is to say, a loan,—according to the old Anglo-Saxon and German spelling, a *Læn*, or *Lehn*—and what we, following the French, call the "feudal system," is denominated *Lehnwesen* in German; and by some analogous name in all the northern tongues.

All this subject of tenures will be easily understood by the following comparison. A gentleman now lets a farm to his tenant, upon condition that the latter shall

\* A word of dubious and contested origin. In the Scandinavian dialects, such possessions were called *Odal* land; and, perhaps, the word in question was formed from *Odal* by a metathesis, or transposition of syllables.

pay him so much money every year. If the rent be not paid, the landlord seizes his tenant's stock, or ejects or drives him away from his farm. The squire reserves to himself the right of sporting over the fields; and there is an understanding that the tenant will do his best to preserve the game. The landlord also expects that the tenant should vote in his interest at the county election: if a body of yeomanry be raised, he considers that the tenant is bound to join the troop under his command. And, lastly, supposing that the tenant should not only pay his rent punctually, but duly perform his honorary engagements, and then die, leaving a son old enough to carry on the business of the farm, the landlord will probably renew his lease upon nearly the same terms.

In a similar transaction during the early ages of the feudal system, the landlord would have allowed the tenant to hold the farm, not upon condition of paying a money-



never called their benefices by any name excepting that of loans, as I have before observed. \*

This is the mere outline of an institution which gradually expanded so as to embrace the entire policy of the most flourishing nations of Western Christendom. Here, it will be sufficient to observe, that upon receiving the benefice according to the rough copy of the Roman law, the vassal always performed homage according to the Teutonic law: the one appeared the necessary consequence of the other. And the class of persons thus benefited or *beneficed* increased very rapidly, both on the continent and in Britain. We are compelled to help ourselves, in the history of the Anglo-Saxon tenures, by borrowing a few pages from the continental historians; but we may do so with confidence. The general features of the law were similar on either side of the channel. Morally speaking, the different kingdoms of Christendom formed but one commonwealth; the "Clerks," who were almost the only lawyers, constituted one corporation, and were in constant intercourse with each other, and their management of legal business tended greatly to increase the uniformity which prevailed.

At the mention of a "knight," we immediately see a noble and gallant warrior, mounted on a prancing steed, his shield decorated with blazonry, and his plumed helmet adorned with the favour bestowed upon him by the fair "ladye" whom he has left in her summer bower. Such was the aspect of the feudal tenantry of the middle ages, after the institution had been adorned by the spirit of Gothic chivalry. But originally the Anglo-Saxon

\* For the proofs of this etymology, see *Rise and Progress*, &c. p. ccv., &c.

Knight\* was merely the servant of his lord, whom he followed to battle, in order that he might work out, by the hard dints of his sword, the service for which his five hydes of land had been granted to him. These Knights were also called *Thegns* or *Thanes*,† which means the same thing, Servants. The title of thane, however, soon became an honour, when applied to those who attended upon the sovereign. Terms denoting the most humble offices, acquire pride and honour when brought within the sphere of royalty, and gilt by the splendour of the rays which dart from the crown; and when, for instance, we know how well it sounds, at this day, to be *Groom of the Stole*, or *Lord of the Bedchamber*, we may easily understand that the serving-men of Ethelbert or Redwald would hold their heads much above their fellow-countrymen, who did not sit in the king's hall.

At the period when we can obtain any clear insight into the history of the country, the thanes had already

had been taught and disciplined during his banishment, was considered as the very model of good government and policy, and feudal subjection was now becoming one of the main supports of the power of the Carlovingian dynasty. As an example of the policy thus pursued, let us read the history of the restless Tassilo, the representative of the *Agilofings*, the ancient chieftains of the Bavarian nation. Defeated by Pepin (A.D. 748), he received back from the victor the territory upon which the Bavarians dwelt, to be held as a benefice: he took the oath of fealty; and the obligations to which he had subjected himself are soon afterwards displayed. Tassilo appears as one of the vassals of Pepin's crown; and Tassilo and his followers increase the host which Pepin leads against the Lombard enemy. His subjection is again solemnly confirmed. Appearing in the *Cour Plenièrre* at Compiègne (A.D. 757), amongst the nobles of the Frankish crown, he humbly "commends" himself as the vassal of Pepin, and of his sons, Charles and Carloman: his oath is renewed upon the relics of the apostles of the Gauls; and all the great men and nobles of the Bavarians assent, on their part, to the bond which Tassilo has thus incurred. But neither the promise, nor the oath, nor the obligation, could ensure the obedience of Tassilo. The Bavarian withdrew his allegiance from Pepin, nor was the latter ever able to regain his supremacy.

The power of Charlemagne at length visited the rebel who contemned his summons. His armies advance to the banks of the Lech (A.D. 788); and Tassilo, surrounded by the troops of Charlemagne, humbly draws near to the emperor, and surrenders up his Duchy of Bavaria, by delivering his sceptre or staff. But the benefice was immediately regranted to him; and Tassilo,

in addition to the usual forms of homage, delivered his son and twelve other hostages into the power of his sovereign.

The lieges of Charlemagne assemble from all parts of the empire, in the imperial palace of Ingelheim (A.D. 789)—Tassilo amongst the rest. He is accused of treason, or rather, of desertion from the army. Sentence of death is passed upon him; but, by the sagacious clemency of Charlemagne, the rebel vassal is clad in the monkish cowl, and the punishment is commuted into the perpetual imprisonment of a monastery.

I have chosen this example of Tassilo, as one of which we possess the most ample details, and by which the bearing of these transactions may be best understood. Charlemagne, by compelling a conquered chieftain to become his "man," acquired a much firmer hold upon Tassilo than by merely demanding tribute from an inferior or weaker chieftain. A legal obligation was

An ancient Teutonic chieftain, like Tassilo, before he performed homage, was only the leader of his people, not the lord of the land. He commanded the men, but he did not own the soil. This, to my Scottish readers, will be perfectly intelligible. The "*Cean-Cinne*,"—the king of the kin, the head of the lineage—or chieftain, who possessed the most absolute power over his clan, had not necessarily any claim to the superiority of the country of the clan; whilst the feudal superior had not, as such, any authority over the clansmen.\* The authorities of chieftain, and of feudal lord or baron, might be united, but they were frequently quite distinct. By the compact with his sovereign, Tassilo acquired a new right; and, from being merely the Duke of the Bavarians, he became Duke of Bavaria. It is true that the transactions between Tassilo and Pepin and Charlemagne could not, according to strict justice, divest the people of their franchises; but might, in all cases, overcomes right; and, as the Bavarians in general participated in the protection afforded to their sovereign, they might be the less impatient of the change. Over the minor chieftains of his nation, Tassilo would equally gain in authority. He would attempt to impose upon them the same obligations to which he had submitted; and, if they rebelled, the ready hand of his liege lord would surely aid him, in suppressing any example of resistance likely to prove a dangerous precedent for the vassals of the crown.

The two elements of feudality—namely, the donation of land as the price of military service, and the tie of

\* Thus the late Duke of Gordon, as feudal superior of the lands and estates held by the Camerons, Macphersons, and Macdonnells of Keppoch, had no vassalage or command over these clans, who only obeyed their patriarchal chieftains, Lochiel, Clunie, and Keppoch.

vassalage, appear to have grown up with the Anglo-Saxon kingdoms, and we may consider them as coeval with the kingdoms themselves. But, as a political institution, or as applied to the relation between an Anglo-Saxon Bretwalda and his subordinate sovereigns, we do not find that at any time, anterior to the reign of Egbert, they were clearly connected. Oswald, for instance, in obtaining the superiority over the Picts and the Scots, did not thereby claim any dominion over the land upon which they dwelt. The vassalage was personal: it was like one army surrendering to another. The Picts and the Scots submitted to the Angles, but the land was not considered; and I am not prepared to say, that if the Scots or the Picts threw off their allegiance, the Bretwalda could treat them as rebels in the legal sense of the word. He would attack them in their fastnesses; burn their huts; carry off their cattle; and put men, women, and children to the sword, and do them the

or Charlemagne. Edward had also established the same jurisdiction over the Britons, and we possess the documents which show that the Prince of South Wales, Howell, the Good, submitted to the judgment of Edward's court (A.D. 922) concerning two "*Commots*" of Brecknock,\* claimed by Morgan Hên, who, like himself, was a vassal of Edward's. Under Edgar the feudal system was carried to its full extent; and the vassalage of his allies was obtained, not by force, but by milder means. "Kings and earls repaired to him, submitting to his will without strife or battle." Perhaps no one of them, singly, was strong enough to resist him. Hence he was enabled to reduce them all to a uniform rule, and it is to this uniformity of policy that we must apply the language used by the chroniclers, who extol him as the restorer, or rather the founder of the state, the "Charlemagne, the Cyrus, and the Romulus of Britain."

The royal title had been lost by all the subordinate chieftains of the Anglo-Saxon or Anglo-Danish states. They continued, however, very powerful. Athelstane, Alderman or Duke of the East Angles, was called "semi-rex," or "half-king." His wife, Alfwina, much praised for her piety, was the nurse of Edgar; and Aylwin, his son and successor, obtained the title of Alderman of all England. It is difficult to define the exact signification of these titles; and I am inclined to think that the latter, inscribed upon Aylwin's tomb, only referred to East Anglia. But be that as it may, they were tokens of the great power which these rulers possessed. Northumbria, since the submission of the country to Edred, had been governed by *Jarls* or Earls

\* The *Commots* of *Ystradwy* and *Ewias*—the latter is now included in the county of Hereford.

... more particularly  
governed the provinces or shires  
length it wholly supplanted the

Alderman, as applied to such  
aldermen, therefore, are now in  
my Lord Mayor; but our earls  
House, by the side of the king;  
adhered to the successors of the  
through all the vicissitudes of state

The earls, or aldermen—for in  
may consider the titles as new  
many royal rights, though, of course  
in degree. One third of the rights  
belonged to them: hence such  
called "Earls of the third penny"  
privileges varied in different parts  
did the prerogatives of the Anglo-Saxons  
may easily suppose that the farther  
seat of government, the more would  
him an inch and he will take a  
applied to all mankind, and I do  
excepting an earl—I mean a nobleman.



assigned to Earl Oslac. Another dismemberment was bestowed upon Eadulf Evilchild; and these chieftains were "girt with the swords" of the earldoms which they had obtained. This mode of inauguration, it may be remarked, was usual in cases where the ruler of a country had no right to the prouder distinction of a crown. The Duke of Normandy was girt with the sword of the Duchy. Even when the title of earl became merely nominal, and a shadow of its former dignity, this ancient ceremony was retained. As late as the reign of James I., the newly-created earl, when he was introduced into Parliament, was girt with his sword by the king, in presence of the peers.

Lothian, or the part of Bernicia which lies between the Tweed and the Frith of Forth, was constantly exposed to the incursions of the Picts and the Scots (between A.D. 953 and A.D. 961). On account of the great difficulty of defending this remote part of the empire, it had been much neglected by the Anglo-Saxon kings; and the king of the Scots, Indulf, had taken possession of the "Castle of Maidens." This fortress was also called Edwin's burgh, probably because it had been built or restored by Edwin of Northumbria, and it is hardly necessary to observe, that it is the modern Edinburgh.

Kenneth M'Alpine, King of the Scots, had destroyed the Pictish monarchy. Even the Picts themselves almost disappear from history (A.D. 836-859); and our older historians used to believe that the whole nation had been extirpated by Kenneth, the victor. This is certainly an exaggeration; but the Scots subverted the Pictish power; and the people became so absorbed amongst the Scots, that the latter, instead of being con-



prevailed over the ruder tribes. The Scottish monarchs became Saxonized; and the Gael were virtually conquered by the strangers over whom their sovereign had acquired dominion.

It is probable that the homage rendered by Kenneth at Chester, may have been merely due in respect of Lothian. But the rulers of England interpreted the act in their own favour; and the ancient subjection of the Scots to the Anglo-Saxon Empire became the basis of the supposed feudal rights of Edward I., and the primary cause of those bloody wars which desolated both countries until the union of the crowns. Even after that event, pretensions were urged on the one side, and denied on the other, with so much heat and contention, as to keep alive the angry feelings of the elder time. And at the present day, there is more than one true Scot, who thinks himself bound to live and die in the belief, that every charter which attests the attendance of a Scottish prince at the court of the Saxon "Basileus" is a monkish forgery.

Such feelings ought to be regretted rather than encouraged. The real credit and glory of Scotland consists, not in the turbulent independence of the early inhabitants of that country, with whom the present Scots have nothing whatever in common but the name; but in the steadiness and good principle which has enabled them to overcome all the evil tendencies resulting from a weak, factious, and divided government; and to settle into their present state, of a religious, prosperous, and well-ordered community. These are the real glories of Scotland; and they would not be tarnished if every king of the line of Fergus had been dragged in chains at the chariot of the conqueror. Scot-

land is now united to Middlesex by the same ties as Yorkshire. And it would be as unreasonable for the good folks of Leeds to rebel against Queen Victoria, in defence of the prerogatives of King Oswald, as it is for the Edinburghers to make themselves unhappy because King Kenneth was subjected to Edgar's supremacy.

But the question, though utterly unimportant as the object of national pride, is of great importance as a matter of history. By affording a clear and distinct view of the obligations incurred by Kenneth as a member of one of the orders or "Estates" of the great Council or Witenagemot of Edgar, we are enabled to judge concerning the others who sat and acted as his compeers, and to obtain a distinct idea of the nature of the assembly.

Under Edgar, as under the earlier Bretwaldas, the

some anecdotes have escaped them affording us a hint of the matters contained in the popular ballads, by which, as Malmesbury says, Edgar was much defamed. These ancient satiric ballads, specimens of which still remain, though of a later period, were, comparing poetry to painting, similar to the political caricatures of the present day. Addressed to the vulgar, they exhibited a distorted and degraded likeness of the features of the original. Edgar's chroniclers have embellished these features; but they intimate that he incurred great blame for the encouragement which he gave to foreigners—Germans, who uncivilized the English,—Flemings, who corrupted their simplicity of manners, and Danes, by whose example they became drunkards.

I am afraid that all these vices, said to be imported, were indigenous to the soil; but they seem to have received encouragement from the king.

One of Edgar's many concubines was the beautiful Wulfreda, whom he had carried off from the monastery of Wilton. Whether she was a nun or not is uncertain; for the monasteries, as is yet the case, were places of education for females; and some writers assert that Wulfreda had not taken the veil. For this offence Edgar was punished severely. He did penance for seven years, fasting twice a-week. In the Anglo-Saxon age, such a mortification of the flesh was a real *bona fide* bread and water diet, with the addition, perhaps, of a few green herbs and a little salt. Furthermore, the penitent was compelled, during such abstinence, to renounce all the luxuries, and even the comforts of life. Soft beds and the warm bath were denied; and Edgar, as an additional token of repentance, put off his crown, and did not resume it till the expiration of the term of his humiliation



### Chapter XIII.

*Death of Edgar—State of Parties—Edward the Martyr and Ethelred respectively supported by the partizans and adversaries of Dunstan—Edward's party prevail—Dunstan's opponents killed by the falling of the building at Canbe—Murder of Edward by Elfrida—Accession of Ethelred the Unready—Danes renew their attacks—The Dane-geld—Ethelred marries Emma of Normandy—Massacre of the Danes on St. Brice's Day—Sweyne's Invasion—Ethelred abandons England to him—Death of Sweyne—Restoration of Ethelred—Canute continues to occupy the North—Death of Ethelred—Division of the Country between Canute and Edmund Ironside—Murder of the latter—Reign of Canute—Succession of Harold Harefoot and Hardicanute.*

EDGAR departed this life just at the period when he had attained the summit of his power (A.D. 975). In the words of the Anglo-Saxon ode by which his deeds are commemorated, he "chose a brighter light, and ended his earthly joys." He left two sons, the eldest named Edward, son of Elfreda the Fair, and Ethelred, the youngest, the child of his second wife Elfrida. This last-named queen had been the wife of Ethelbald, Alderman of the East Angles. Edgar had slain Ethelbald, in order to obtain the hand of his widow; and this wicked woman appears to have connived at the crime.

The right of directing the succession to the throne appears to have been still inherent in the king; and Edgar, in exercise of this power, had nominated his eldest son Edward as his heir. But the "Atheling," or Prince Royal, and his father, were both mere children;

Edward was fifteen, and Ethelred only seven years old ; and the parties who divided the nation, and whom for shortness sake I will call the Dunstanites and Anti-Dunstanites, were each equally anxious to rule in the name of a minor, and great dissensions arose between them. The whole nation was involved in contention, but the particulars of the disputes are lost. The chronicles describe the events very briefly : they are mentioned with more force, but with great obscurity, in the ode to which I have alluded, and from which we learn that Oslac, the great Earl of Northumbria, was banished, and compelled to fly beyond the "gannet's bath," "the inheritance of the whale," the periphrases by which the Anglo-Saxon scalds designate the sea.

Alfere, the Ealdorman of Mercia, was the chief leader of the Anti-Dunstanites, or the party supporting the seculars. Throughout the whole of his extensive do-





Winchester Cathedral.



gathered strength; and Dunstan was now compelled to submit to the humiliation of meeting his adversaries in the synods, held for the purpose of deciding the momentous questions by which church and state were divided.

The seculars made every effort to defend themselves by argument; and they expected to derive great advantage from the talent and eloquence of a Scottish or Irish bishop named Beornhelm, whom they had invited from his own country, to aid them in the discussion, and stand forward as their champion against Dunstan. The choice of this advocate is a remarkable fact in ecclesiastical history, because it tends to prove that, at this period, the church of the Scots—probably in Ireland—was not entirely subjected to Rome.

A meeting was appointed at Calne, in Wiltshire, and the council, or witenagemot, which included the best part of the nobility of England, assembled in a large upper chamber. Beornhelm addressed this meeting at length. His speech exhibited all the fire and eloquence which could have been expected from his fame. Dunstan now rose, slowly and deliberately, and, as it were, oppressed by age. He avoided entering into any argument, declaring that his time of labour was past;—he sought no conflict,—no—he desired to end the remainder of his life in peace,—but as to his cause, the cause of the church, he trusted that the power of Heaven would be displayed against the enemies of Heaven.

Dunstan had scarcely closed his lips when the edifice shook, the timbers cracked, the floor gave way on the opposite side of the chamber. All those who came together against the Monkish party, were precipitated into the depth below, and maimed or killed amidst the

falling beams. But the end of the floor on which Dunstan and his friends stood, remained quite steady and firm; and none of them were in the least degree hurt or harmed. Was this the result of a fraudulent device? Had Dunstan so caused the chamber to be prepared, that he might entrap his adversaries to their destruction? This question has been much mooted in our days; and the balance of probabilities must be left to the reader's judgment. The moody zeal of Dunstan, heightened and inflamed by mental aberration, may perhaps be thought to have suggested this murderous artifice; but it must be admitted that the difficulty of carrying such a plot into execution with secrecy and safety, must have been very great; and this consideration may serve to diminish the force of our suspicions.

But we must now pass to an undoubted crime: "the foulest deed," as the chronicles say, which ever stained

hall of his mother-in-law. She received him at the doorway, and kissed him. Before the young king alighted, a cup was offered, and as he was quaffing the draught, one of Elfrida's attendants instantly stabbed him in the back. The wounded prince had yet strength enough to give spurs to his horse, and to attempt to rejoin his companions; but he expired on the road; and the bloody corpse, dragged in the stirrups by the affrighted animal, revealed the fate which "Edward the Martyr" had sustained.

Ethelred came to the throne with a bad name. He was called "the Unready;" and this appellation appears to have been suggested almost as soon as he was born, by Dunstan's ill-will. When he took Ethelred from the font, he exclaimed, with his usual vehemence, that "the babe would prove a man of nought;" and he never concealed the dislike which he entertained towards the son of Elfrida.

The nobles, prelates, and great men of England being assembled, according to the usages of the constitution, Ethelred was acknowledged as king (A.D. 979). Dunstan was compelled to assist at the ceremony. Probably he would have set up a pretender, if any could have been found; but Ethelred was the sole scion of the royal stem. Dunstan, however, did his worst: when he placed the crown upon the head of Ethelred, he accompanied it by a curse. "Even as, by the death of thy brother, thou didst aspire to the kingdom, hear the decree of heaven. The sin of thy wicked mother and of her accomplices shall rest upon thy head; and such evils shall fall upon the English as they have never yet suffered, from the days when they first came into the isle of Britain, even until the present time."

There is no reason to suppose that Ethelred, a child of eleven years of age, had, in any way, assented to the murder of Edward. An anecdote is related concerning him, so trivial in itself that I shall not repeat it, but important as showing that Ethelred was strongly attached to his brother; and even in the course of Dunstan's invective it may be observed that all the sin is laid to Elfrida's charge. Dunstan's imprecations, however, arising out of his aversion towards the prevailing party, bore most heavily upon the nation; and his prophecy was, like many others, excellently well calculated to insure its own accomplishment. By inducing the people to attribute their misfortunes to the government, he weakened their powers of resistance, so long as Ethelred was on the throne; and he also directly instigated them to desert their monarch as the cause of the evils to which they were exposed. England was pre-







the dreaded banner of the raven was again unfurled, and the Danish vessels approached the shore. Sweyne, the son of the King of Denmark, appears to have been the leader of the army. Banished from home by his father, he was in the full vigour of youth; and the assistance which he had received from Palnatoke, one of the wisest and bravest of the Danish chieftains, rendered him a fearful invader of a country unprepared for defence, either in the council-hall or in the field.

Fiery clouds and meteors had overspread the sky; and the coincidence between these appearances and the changes of fortune on the earth, contributed to dishearten those upon whom the burden of calamity had fallen. The strong burgh of Southampton was plundered, and the inhabitants carried into slavery. At the very same time, other detachments of the "host," the pirate army of the north, invaded Mercia (A.D. 982); Chester was taken, and London was burnt, and the whole of the coast from the Mersey to the Thames was ravaged by these insatiate plunderers. The Danes did not act in combination with each other; and their fleets, or rather their squadrons, were frequently very small. Thus, Dorsetshire was invaded by three ships; and if we estimate their crews at six hundred men, we shall probably overrate their numbers. Any reasonable degree of vigour would have been sufficient to repel the enemy; but at this very period, when unanimity was requisite, great dissensions prevailed.

Disputes arose between the government and the Bishop of Rochester. Ethelred ravaged the lands of the bishopric, and laid siege to Rochester (A.D. 985-986); but, upon payment of a sum of money, he desisted from his hostility. It is probable that the quarrel between the

young king and the bishop arose out of some legal demand, with which the latter refused to comply. But at such a season, when the country was yet smoking with the fires kindled by the Danes, the contest, whatever might have been the strict rights of the parties, was peculiarly unfortunate; and Dunstan, then almost upon his death-bed, laboured in every way to asperse the conduct of the king.

About the same time, Alfric, the son of Alfero, who had succeeded to the earldom of Mercia, having engaged in a conspiracy against Ethelred, was condemned by the witenagemot. His property was confiscated, and he himself, being outlawed, was banished from the country. Such an event is an indication of the internal dissensions which prevailed. But if the banishment of Alfric be a proof of the rebellious spirit of Ethelred's nobles, the speedy restoration of the Earl of Mercia to his former honours is a still greater proof of the dissensions of the

Thane of Ethelred" fell by the *hassagay*,\* which the Danish pirates had probably brought from the Saracen realms.

Brithnoth's achievements have been commemorated in an historical poem of no ordinary merit. And though we may not perhaps agree with the antiquary, who considers the lay as approaching to the simplicity and fire of Homer, still it must be considered a singular and valuable relic of the poesy of the olden time.†

Brithnoth was thus celebrated by the bard, but no others were incited to follow his example, or emulate his fame; and the subsequent invasions of the Danes showed how completely all courage had departed from England. The Danes threatened the southern coast. The Witan assembled; the baneful counsel given by Sigeric, Archbishop of Canterbury, Alphage, Bishop of Winchester, the Ealdorman Ethelward, and the factious Alfric, induced the king and nation to adopt the old and fatal expedient of attempting to appease the invaders by the tribute of the "Dane-geld;" and the sum of ten thousand pounds was the first payment which they exacted from the cowardice of England.

At this price did the English, in the words of the treaty, attempt to "buy peace" of Olave and Justin, and Gurthmund the son of Stegetan. Yet even the payment of the "Geld," raised by direct taxation upon the land, was, perhaps, less humiliating than another condition imposed upon the English. The Danes were fed by the country which they had impoverished, and

\* In Anglo-Saxon, *Ategar* or *Hategar*, evidently the same with the Spanish *Acagaya*. I do not know the root of the word, but it seems to be found also in *attaghan*.

† A translation of this poem may be found in Mr. Conybeare's most valuable work,—a publication which affords a general view of the whole body of Anglo-Saxon poetry.

the people were compelled to pamper their fiercest enemies. In the advice which prompted this submission there was both weakness and treachery. Alfric had been in secret league with the Danes; and a defeat was occasioned by his treason. A large fleet had assembled for the defence of London; Alfric sent secret intelligence to the enemy, and went over to them on the eve of the battle. He escaped unpunished by Ethelred, who caused his son, Elfgar, to be blinded—a savage and unpardonable revenge for the misdeeds of his father.

The punishment inflicted upon Elfgar could not repel the Danes. They were not to be scared by such a vengeance (A.D. 994). Sweyne, accompanied by Olave, King of Norway, advanced with redoubled force and fury. London was spared; but the whole of the south of England received “unspeakable harm;” and sixteen thousand pounds were paid to the Danes, literally for the purpose of inviting them to further mischief. E-

paid as Dane-geld. Each pound was then equivalent, in weight of silver, to somewhat more than three pounds of our nominal currency. But the intrinsic worth of the coin affords no adequate measure of its value. And the worth of fifty thousand pounds in the reign of Ethelred will be understood, by knowing that this sum would have purchased about one million two hundred thousand acres of arable land, together with such rights and privileges in the common lands and woods appertaining to the inclosed land, as may be considered to have trebled the superficial admeasurement.\*

The success of the Danes was much facilitated by the extreme want of steadiness on the part of the English. When the enemy was in the field, the king and his witan ordained to proceed against them "by sea" and "by land." But when the ships were prepared, delays arose, and thus, in the words of the chronicle, "the forwarder the expedition should have been, the later it was; and from one time to another they still suffered the army of the enemies to increase." The Danes continually retreated from the sea-coast, and the English pursued them in vain. And, in the end, no other consequences were produced, excepting "vexation to the people, waste of money, and increase of strength to the enemies." Even when the king summoned the whole power of Wessex and of Mercia, the Danes went wheresoever they would, whilst the undisciplined English militia, raised for the defence of the country, did more harm to the people than any external foe.

Hostilities had prevailed between Ethelred and Richard

\* The ordinary price of land was about five pounds of silver per hyde. The calculation must not be considered as precise, but I could not find any better mode of showing the value of money, than by taking the price of land as the standard.

II., or the Good, Duke of Normandy, son of Richard "*Sanz-peur*," the grandson of Rollo the "*Ganger*" (A.D. 991). These disputes were terminated by the mediation of the Pope; and it was particularly agreed that neither party should harbour any individual suspicions to the other potentate (A.D. 1002). This pacification was followed by a marriage between Ethelred and Emma, the sister of the Duke of Normandy. Ethelred proposed thereby to increase his power, and to protect his kingdom. But this eventful union, which ultimately afforded the pretext for the Norman claims, seemed, from the first, to bode ill to the English nation. Emma was accompanied by a train of favourites and dependants. One of them, "the French Earl Hugh," was appointed "*Gerefa*," or Sheriff of Exeter, and his negligence or treachery afterwards surrendered the city as a prey to the Danish enemy.

(13th Nov. 1002), he gave the fatal order for the massacre of all such Danes, within his dominions, as were subjected to his power. This wicked act arose out of a most mischievous policy. From the reign of Athelstane, the Kings of Wessex had been accustomed to encourage the resort of Danish adventurers, whom they retained as their own body-guard, or household troops. It is said that the kings exerted the prerogative of quartering one of these satellites in every house. Such, indeed, were the "guests" of the despotic monarchs of Norway, who were placed by the king's command, as the inmates of his subjects, quite at his will and pleasure; and the constant resort of the Norwegians to the courts of the opulent and munificent Kings of England, so often commemorated in the Icelandic "sagas," may be considered as one of the evidences of the favour shown to the "heathen thieves." That these stipendiary bravoes, the "hns-carls," placed under the immediate protection of the sovereign, should have conducted themselves with great insolence towards the natives, may be easily credited; and it is equally possible that a formidable body of soldiery, feeling no tie of allegiance or affection towards the monarch who had purchased their mercenary aid, may have conspired to slay him and his witan, and to usurp, or to assist their brethren in usurping the kingdom.

Numbers, however, of the murdered Danes had become quiet and peaceable settlers in England. Many had intermarried with the hosts who received them, and the Danish women and children were included in this inhuman proscription. Gunhilda, the sister of Sweyne, a woman of high spirit and great beauty, had embraced Christianity; but neither her sex nor her faith could protect her. She was compelled to witness the death

which we can indulge in seeing  
from the conviction of the  
abhorrence did the deed excite  
queror afterwards employed to  
day" as an incentive to his  
them to avenge the blood of  
punishment was at hand.  
death, exclaimed, rather with  
than of anger, that the shed  
bring the greatest evils upon  
brother, whose greediness had  
ditional stimulus of revenge, a  
greater inveteracy than at any  
1004 to 1007). His repeated  
country to the extreme of  
Wessex was "marked with  
lation." In this emergency a  
assembled by Ethelred's commu  
save the land before it should  
as they were to adopt the exped  
other mode of mitigating the e  
ing a tribute



It appears from the expressions used by the chroniclers, that the pride of the English nation was deeply wounded by the payment of "geld," or tribute, to the enemy. Tribute was the mark of subjection which the Kings of Wessex had so long exacted from the subject states of the Cymri; and the stipend was as prejudicial to the honour of the crown as it was burdensome to the people at large. Under these circumstances Ethelred adopted a new policy. In addition to the ancient national militia, an armed host was raised by the landholders in proportion to their property (A.D. 1008). Every nine hides of land were bound to find one man armed with a hauberk and helmet. A naval force was raised in the same manner; every three hundred and ten hides being charged to provide one vessel for the defence of the kingdom.\* This imposition is the remote origin of the well-known tax of "ship money;" and according to the dependence of the mystic chain by which human events are linked and bound together, we may view, in Ethelred's regulations, the cause of the expulsion of the Stuarts from the throne. By means of these measures, a formidable fleet was equipped. "Never were so many ships gathered together in England before, as in this king's day, as the books tell us;"—if the land north of the Humber furnished its due contingent, the fleet may have amounted to one thousand vessels, and the men at arms to upwards of forty thousand men—a force which, properly directed, might, with the aid of the "fyrd," or militia, might have been sufficient to drive the Danes for ever from the British shores. But the account of the armament is concluded by lamentations for its inutility.

\* The Chroniclers vary in the particulars of the assessment.

...his nearest kind  
and rapacity. The moral defect  
Ethelred may be admitted; but  
his history do not altogether justify  
rapacity which has been brought  
chroniclers. Treachery, and the  
by which he sought to counteract  
tributed to paralyze his efforts. The  
predatory invasions is attributable  
craft of Elfric, who continued his  
notwithstanding his declared animosity.  
His faithlessness was most evident  
vented the loss of Exeter, to which  
The forces of Wilts and Hampshire  
mand. But when he should have  
brought forth his old wiles again,  
ness, he avoided battle; and allowed  
and ravage the shores with entire  
narrative of judicial sentences pro  
betrays the discovery and punishment  
supposed offences against the state  
feited all his property. "W. 121.

possessing abilities equal to his wickedness ; and he soon acquired the highest favour. The favourite became the relative of the king ; he obtained the hand of Edgitha, the daughter of Ethelred, and was soon afterwards appointed Ealdorman of the whole kingdom of Mercia, or the dominion which Elfric had held. Elfric was yet alive, and it is uncertain whether he was again deprived of his hereditary dominions, or whether the appointment of Edric was in the nature of a viceroyalty. I incline, however, to the latter opinion, and I think that Edric obtained a delegated authority which enabled him to exercise the royal functions, and to demand such obedience and services from the nobles of Mercia as the king himself might have claimed. This promotion, and still more, this mis-alliance of a daughter of Odin, constituted an entire departure from the ancient principles of the Anglo-Saxon government.

Edric was the head of a numerous and ambitious family, who seem all to have participated in his good fortune. Great dissensions, however, existed amongst them (A.D. 1009). Brihtric, the brother of Edric, conspired against Wulfnoth, his nephew, who bore the ambiguous title of "child" of the South Saxons. In other documents he was called the "minister," or the Thane of Sussex. Wulfnoth fled the country, but he contrived to induce twenty of the king's ships to join him, and with this force he plundered the southern coast, and wrought every kind of mischief, even as the Danes themselves would have done. Brihtric obtained the command of eighty vessels, and with this fleet cruized against Wulfnoth. But a tempest drove Brihtric's vessels on shore. The "child" of Sussex profited by this mischance, and attacked the king's fleet, which he

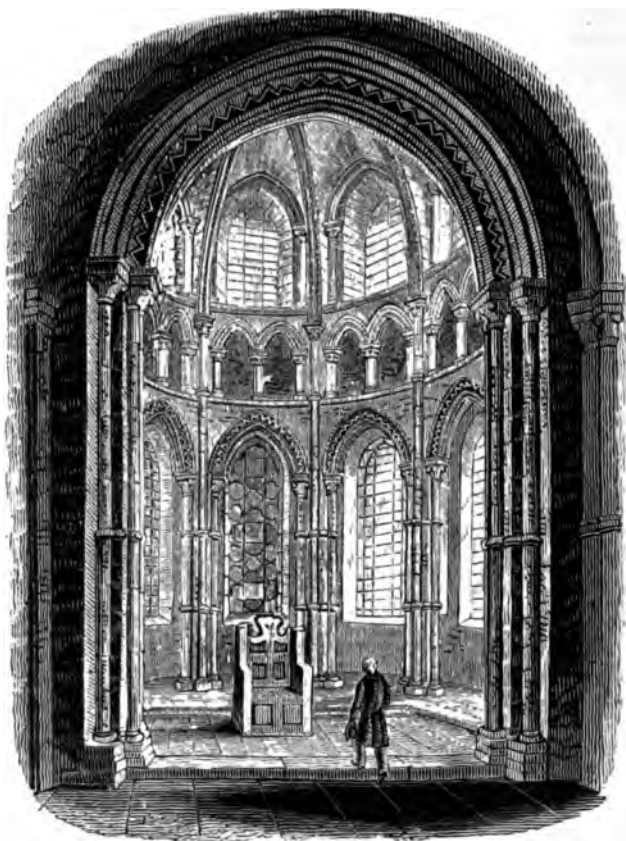
burnt. From some cause, which is not clearly explained, but which probably is to be traced to the influence of Edric, Ethelred appeared panic-struck, and returned home with his ealdormen and "heah witan," or great councillors, and the fleet was dispersed. In this miserable civil war, the forces intended to guard the coasts were dissipated and lost.

Immediately after this disaster, about Lammas (A.D. 1009), arrived a large army of Danes called "Thurkill's host," surpassing all previous foes in ferocity. Earl Thurkill was one of the pirates of Jomsburgh, so celebrated in northern story for their invincible courage and hardihood, no less than for their inveterate hatred of the Christian name. Thurkill's expedition was taken for the purpose of avenging the death of his brother, Earl Sigwald, and his vessels were filled with the flower of the Scandinavian youth. A sum of three thousand pounds paid by the men of East Kent purchased a

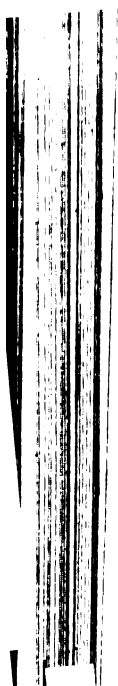
As soon as the armies were opposed to each other, an East Anglian Dane, Thurkill Myrenheafod, either from cowardice, or, as is more probable, from treachery, took flight,—all the East Anglians followed, and the English army was defeated with great slaughter. Here perished the noble Wulfric, “the consul of the Mercians,” whose dominions appear to have been afterwards known as the earldom of Lancaster; Athelstane, the king’s kinsman; and many other good thanes. It is noticed in the account of the battle, that “Cambridgeshire stood firm,”—a mode of expression which shows how the levies were identified with the districts from whence they proceeded.

This victory seemed to place the whole country in the power of the Danes. All the witan were summoned to meet the king, to concert measures of defence; but the members of the legislature were utterly confounded. No good counsel could be given or adopted. Whatsoever was advised, “it stood not a month, until at length there was not a captain left, who could or would assemble any troops; each fled as he could, and no shire, moreover, could stand by the other.” The spirit of the English was wholly broken. If two or three pirates appeared, they drove the whole country before them. The chronicler enumerates, with doleful precision, the districts which they had reduced to the last stage of misery and desolation, and then, by way of climax, exclaims, these disasters “befel us by bad counsels, because we would neither offer tribute nor fight with the enemy.” But the evil lay in the first of the alternatives—for it was the submission to the Danegeld which had wholly ruined the strength and heart of

The Danes had now overrun almost the whole of Mercia and of Wessex, and the mischief being done, Ethelred and his counsellors resorted to their old dastardly policy. Tribute was offered, as usual; and the Danes were bought off, for a short period, by the offer of money and of provisions. It should seem that a vigorous effort might yet have rescued the country; but Ethelred was so perplexed by domestic treachery, as to render resistance impossible. Eadric Streone had prevented any effectual opposition to Thurkill in the first instance, and he was now about to cause still greater evil. A brother of Eadric had been appointed governor, perhaps sheriff, of Kent. He acted with great tyranny towards the people, and deprived the nobles of their inheritance. These haughty and ferocious people avenged themselves, and Eadric's brother perished in his dwelling, which was burnt in a popular tumult.



Chapel in Canterbury Cathedral.





During twenty days, the Danes besieged Canterbury without effect, when that faithlessness, which seems to have been the bane of England, delivered the city into their power. Elfmár, the traitor, who secretly admitted the Danes into Canterbury, was doubly guilty, for his life had been saved by the intercession of the prelate whom he betrayed. The city was burnt, the inhabitants slaughtered or carried away as slaves. As for the archbishop, the Danes kept him in cruel and squalid captivity. They offered to allow him to ransom his life, and even urged the acceptance of the offer. The old man steadily refused. He had no worldly goods of his own, he said, nor would he waste the possessions of the church, which belonged not to him, but to the poor and needy, for whose benefit they were given. At length the Danes, incensed beyond measure by his firmness, condemned him to death. They still thought they could obtain their wishes; and as they brought him out, they cried out, "Gold, Bishop, give us gold, gold!" Alphege was calm and unmoved. The Danes were assembled in a drunken banquet; they threw their battleaxes at him, cast the horns and bones of oxen at him, and stoned him until he fell to the ground, desperately bruised and hurt, yet not dead. At length one of the Danes, whom Alphege had baptized, put an end to his agony.

Edric, and all the chief witan of "Angel Cyn," now assembled at London, and continued their session until a tribute of forty-eight thousand pounds, being the price of one million one hundred and fifty-two thousand acres of land, was paid to the enemy. No mention is made of the king, and it is not certain that he was present; but ~~after the money~~ <sup>after the money</sup> had been received by the Danes, "oaths were sworn, and he appears to have regained

submission was intende

entered Ethelred's servi  
being enabled to betray  
countrymen. The subse  
was engaged might appea  
yet the conduct of the ear  
as an act of rebellion ag  
had already become jealous  
Thurkill; and the advice  
urged him to attack the En  
was gladly received and spe

A mighty fleet was assen  
with gold and silver—the  
bright and fantastic imager  
and dragons rose above the  
beneath the oars of the ships  
and splendid barks of easte  
pared for festal triumph tha  
baric splendour, like the t  
excited the pride and energ  
manned the vessels, and, he  
power

lei



Monk Bar, York.





Walmsgate Barbican, York.



term "host," used in this place, cannot be well applied to the old descendants of the Danish settlers; and it must designate a fresh floating population of Danes by which the country had been occupied during the disturbances.

Committing his fleet to the command of his son Canute, Sweyne marched to the south, with his main army. According to the usual scheme of operations adopted by the Danes, they had compelled the inhabitants of the provinces which submitted to them, to supply horses and provisions, and thus they were enabled to proceed with the greatest rapidity. Oxford and Winchester surrendered, and probably escaped further harm.

Northumbria had been spared, the south was abandoned to desolation. The country was wasted far and wide by fire and sword. London, which was occupied by Ethelred and Thurkill, held out against the Dane. The citizens were pre-eminently distinguished for their martial spirit. Malmesbury, in a strain of monastic eloquence, exclaims that Mars himself would not have disdained them; and they either gave battle to Sweyne, or made such a show of resistance as compelled him to retreat. But the Danes did not meet with any effectual opposition in Wessex; and Sweyne having established his head-quarters at Bath, he received the homage of Ethelmar, Ealdorman of Devonshire, and of all the thanes of the west. The people of the north confirmed their previous submission. Ethelred abandoned London; and like King John, under circumstances not entirely dissimilar, he took refuge in the Isle of Wight. The burgesses of London, who had hitherto defended themselves so stoutly, now opened their gates to the invader (A.D.

1013). "They feared lest he might undo them," spoil their wealth, and deprive them of their eyes and limbs. Sweyne was now considered as "full King of England," or rather of the several kingdoms and earldoms of which it was composed. Some portions, however, of the Anglo-Saxon dominions refused their homage, nor did the Scottish Prince of Cumbria acknowledge the supremacy of the Dane.

London, it is stated, would not have surrendered, had Ethelred encouraged the burgesses to defend themselves. His own courage, as Malmesbury informs us, was broken by the consciousness of his own misdeeds. This is the usual tone which has been adopted towards Ethelred by the ancient historians; but when Ethelred addresses the few faithful prelates and thanes who had followed him to the Isle of Wight, we hear him disclose another cause. "He had been banished," he declared, "by the treachery of his generals — abandoned, deserted, and betrayed.



Duke of Normandy, till he was recalled by the sudden and unexpected death of Sweyne. According to the legends, the pagan was slain by the anger of St. Edmund, whose possessions he invaded.

Upon the death of Sweyne, the warriors who manned the fleet, and the Danish "Thingmanna," whom we may call the household troops, accepted Canute as their king—an act of authority which they were perhaps empowered to exercise, as representing the Danish community. But the "witan" of "Angel Cyn," or the English legislature, unanimously resolved to restore the line of Cerdic, and deputies were sent to Ethelred accordingly, to inform him of their resolution, which was in substance, that the English would prefer their legitimate sovereign to any other lord,—*provided that he would govern them better than he did before.* In consequence of this address, Ethelred despatched his son, Edmund the Atheling, with his reply; and the expressions employed in the Saxon chronicle seems to be the very words of the writ or letter which Ethelred addressed to the nation by whom he had been recalled. "He would be a good lord to them—amend those matters which, as all agreed, required reform—and grant a general amnesty for all that had been said and done against him; *provided nevertheless that they should submit to his royal authority without fraud or treachery.*" These conditions were gladly accepted. The compact was confirmed by the legislature; and it was "given for doom," that all Danish kings should from henceforth be outlaws in England.

This remarkable transaction laid the foundations for the greatest alterations in the principles of the constitution. With the full acknowledgment of hereditary

germ of Magna Chart  
pacts between the king

Ethelred returned a  
But the decree of th  
against Canute. It d  
umbrian Earldoms had  
and the inhabitants of l  
the lawful government  
But he was exceedingly  
given to Sweyne; these  
and miserably mutilated.  
thousand pounds, as the  
thousand acres of land, w.  
pay to the "host" at Gr  
tinned in undiminished st

Through all these revol  
his power. He was al  
country, let who might be  
the witan of the Danish  
at Oxford (A.D. 1015).  
congresses which were as  
witanagemots. *Sicfawth*

unable to defend themselves. Their retainers sought refuge in the Tower of St. Frideswide's, now Christ's Church Cathedral, which was burnt by the assailants. The widow of Sigferth, distinguished for her beauty, was borne as a captive to Malmsbury. Thence she was carried off by Edmund the Atheling—Edmund *Ironsides*—as he was called by the English, and he was equally strong in body and energetic in mind. The young widow, nothing loth, became the wife of sturdy *Ironsides*; and Edmund, by force, obtained possession of the territory which had belonged to Sigferth and his brother. It does not clearly appear that the murder of Sigferth and Morcar was intended to answer any political purpose; but, in its consequence, it enabled Edmund Ironside to obtain a power in opposition to the plans of Edric Streone.

Ethelred was sorely stricken by infirmity, and Canute continued to harass and plunder the western parts of Wessex. Edric and Edmund respectively raised all their forces; and the commanders assembled their troops at Corsham, where Ethelred was confined to his bed by illness. It was intended to attack Canute with their united armies; but Edric was now plotting to betray Ironside into the hands of his enemies. The armies separated, and Edric, together with forty ships, joined the Danes. The greater part of Wessex followed the same example. Mercia continued true to Ethelred, though many districts were shortly afterwards plundered by Canute, with the help of the traitor Edric.

Ethelred was now in London, where his authority was scarcely acknowledged; for when Edmund the Atheling began to collect another army, which the Mercians were willing to furnish, he could not act with effect, because

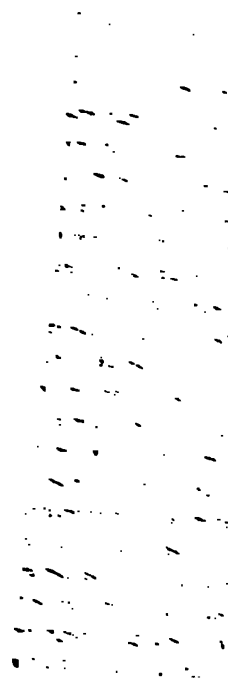
the "burgesses" did not assist him—a remarkable proof of their military importance. Another general array of the country, or of such parts as were not in Canute's power, was then summoned, under penalty of the highest mulct which the law imposed for neglect of this duty. Ethelred, however, would not take the command; he had secret information of some conspiracy that was hatching against him, and he returned to London.

Uchtred, the Earl of Northumbria, had begun to carry on a predatory war on his own account. It was expected that he would assist Ethelred; but he marched with his army into the Mercian Earldom of Chester, which he ravaged without opposition. Canute, on his part, employed himself in wasting the eastern parts of Mercia, plundering the country as he advanced, until he reached York. Uchtred was then much alarmed, and returning to Northumbria, he submitted to Canute, giving hostages for the performance of his engagements.

same time another rival convention was sitting at Southampton. It is described as composed of the bishops, abbots, dukes, and chief nobles of all England. This is the expression of an ancient, though not of a contemporary writer ; but as it is evidently incorrect, we can only conjecture that the witan of Wessex constituted this assembly, which assumed the entire disposition of the crown.

The members of the Anglo-Saxon parliament accommodated themselves to circumstances with the most admirable and edifying facility. But a little while since, they had recalled Ethelred and outlawed the Danes for ever—now they again declared that they withdrew all allegiance from the children of Ethelred ; they accepted Canute as king, and took the oath of fidelity to him ; and Canute, on his part, promised that he would govern the English according to law, human and divine. No feeling of personal dislike could exist towards Edmund Ironside, who on all occasions is mentioned with praise. This proceeding, therefore, of the English legislature shows that Ethelred's constant suspicions of treachery, or, to use a milder term, of disaffection, were not unfounded. But the compact itself, irregular as the mode may have been in which it was effected, exhibits the progress of new ideas of government in the monarchy. The witan considered themselves as competent to alter the succession, to expel the ancient line, and to transfer the crown to another dynasty ; demanding at the same time a promise from the new sovereign, that he would rule according to law and justice.

It might be very difficult to decide who was legitimate king and who pretender ; and, as usual in such cases, the question was referred to the decision of the sword.



and displayed all the valour and energy of his character. It was the fifth time that he had assembled all the English nation against the enemy. The defeat of the Danes would have been inevitable, when Edric suddenly raised the cry that Edmund had fallen. "Flee, English! flee, English!" exclaimed he, "dead is Edmund!" I quote the words exactly as they have been preserved. Edric had slain a thane, whose countenance greatly resembled that of Edmund, and holding the bloody head aloft, at the same time that he cast away the dragon, the standard of Wessex, he and his troops took flight, and abandoned the field. The whole army was thrown into confusion, and entirely routed; and thus did Canute gain the victory, though all the English nation fought against him. The consequences were most disastrous: and, as it is expressed in the Anglo-Saxon chronicle, all the nobility of England were undone.

Canute marched with great rapidity towards Gloucestershire, following Edmund, who had retreated in that direction. Ironside reassembled his forces, and when the armies were arrayed against each other, he stepped forward and challenged Canute to single combat, "for it was pity," he said, "that so many lives should be put in jeopardy to satisfy their ambition."\* Canute declined the duel; alleging that he, a man of small stature, would have no chance if opposed to the stalwart Edmund. There was prudence in this determination; and he added, that it would be better that they two should divide the realms between them, even as their fathers had done before.

\* According to Ethelred, Abbot of Eivaulx, this mode of ending the differences between the monarchs, was directed by the acclamation of the leaders of both armies, who declared that the kings should either settle their differences by single combat, or agree to a partition. There are other variations in the narratives.

When this proposal was made known to the respective armies, they hailed it with gladness. Edmund was compelled to yield to the clamour; and Edric Streone, always ready and alert to act against his natural sovereign, was at the head of a party of counsellors, or "witan," by whom the partition was negotiated. Wessex, Essex, East-Anglia, and London were assigned to Edmund, with a nominal superiority over the remaining dominions, which were allotted to the Dane—thus, to use the expression of the chroniclers, the crown remained to Edmund Ironside.

Soon afterwards Edmund ceased to live. The manner in which he met with his death was never exactly known, yet no one seems to have doubted but that Edric Streone was the perpetrator of the deed. The evidence that the crime was committed is satisfactory; that Canute was strictly an accessory, cannot be distinctly proved; but he reaped all the profit of the murder, and became sovereign of the whole empire.

He began, however, with a colour of law and a pretence of legitimacy. A great council of the bishops, dukes, and "optimates," was convened at London (A.D. 1017); and in this assembly Canute appealed to those who had been witnesses to the convention between him and Edmund, as to the terms upon which the compact was concluded. They all loudly testified that Edmund had not intended to reserve any right of succession to his brothers, and that it was his wish that Canute should be the guardian of his own children during their infancy. This was a falsehood extorted partly by force, and partly for the purpose of conciliating the favour of the monarch. Canute did not stop here; he urged the witan to take the oath of fealty to him, the members of the assembly



yielded, and acknowledged him, not as regent, but as king; he gave them his "handselled" pledge of peace and protection; all old enmities were to be buried in oblivion. Full amnesty was granted for all that had been said and done. Ethelred's descendants were outlawed, and for ever excluded from the throne; and a payment of "geld" to the "host" ratified the compact, and purchased the gratitude or mercy of the Danish sovereign.

Canute, by dividing England into four distinct governments, made an important alteration in the administration of the country. Wessex, as the chief and predominant state, he retained under his own immediate sway. Thurkill obtained the earldom of East Anglia, the jealousies which had arisen between him and Canute having been appeased. Edric and Eric were respectively confirmed as earls in Mercia and Northumbria. But it must be recollected that these great earls were of the nature of viceroys, and the ancient territorial earls and ealdormen retained their old authority. Leofric in particular, the Earl of Mercian-Chester, ruled in his dominions with so much energy, as to render him one of the most influential nobles in England.

By the legislative proceedings of the witenagemot, or parliament, the descendants of Ethelred were again excluded from the throne. But the pretensions of these Princes were sufficiently strong to excite the apprehensions of Canute, and he was tempted to a repetition of those crimes by which his character, otherwise deserving of no ordinary praise, was so deeply stained. Edwy, the brother of Ironside, was declared an outlaw in the witenagemot, and afterwards slain, according to the advice of Edric, and by Canute's express command.

the more likely to  
sovereign.

Edric Streone, sovereign with fana and Edward, the twofold. A feeling of withheld Canute from and he sent the babe and vassal, requesting suspicion. The child the Scandinavian chief out of the reach of Canute of Hungary, by whom and honour. Edmund espoused the kinswoman and the fruits of the Christina, and Margaret became the wife of Malcolm, the rights of the line of Malcolm's progeny, after

There were two other years, but more form

his dominions. But we hear nothing more of the treaty ; and instead of restoring the inheritance of the children, he wooed their widowed mother, the thoughtless, heartless Emma, who bestowed her hand without reluctance upon the murderer of her husband. According to the well-known legend, she proved her innocence, when accused of incontinence, by walking unhurt over seven burning ploughshares : but it would be difficult to find a test by which she should be exonerated from great moral guilt, in contracting this most unnatural union.

About the same time Edric met with his merited fate. It is said, that an angry discussion arose upon his claiming some further reward for his good services. Mercia he continued to hold ; but he desired a further addition of wealth and power ; and he urged upon Canute, how, by quitting the ranks of Edmund, he had contributed to that very victory which had secured the crown to the Dane (A.D. 1017). Canute tauntingly replied, that the murderer of an old master would show little fealty to his new liege lord. The tone or the gesture of Canute indicated his wishes. Eric of Northumbria was present ; and conformably, as it should seem, to a preconceived plan, the Danish earl stepped forward, and cut down Edric with his battle-axe : the carcass of the wretch was thrown into the Thames ; and the ghastly head, spiked upon the highest gate of London, announced to the people that the felon had now paid the penalty of his misdeeds.

We seem to be reading the history of Turkey, when we are told by a contemporary, that Canute caused Edric to be put to death quietly, and in his palace, in order to prevent any disturbance in the city. But despotism bears the same shape in all climates and ages ; and Canute, at this period of his reign, had no law but



..... Leofwin  
Great, Brithn  
Atheling, wer  
It does not a  
place, when th  
the Danish kin  
have been proce  
having conspire  
cessors. Their  
Canute's Danish  
All these proce  
the English, who  
conquered people.  
of their king, beha  
ing to popular tra  
met on a bridge, th  
from his horse, and  
from more authentic  
of the forfeited prop  
an irritated people, w  
and given to strang  
over the villainage, i  
landlords were th-

Canute, the king of six realms, did not desire to retain all his stipendiary soldiery in England, and a large body of these dangerous followers departed from the island; but this measure scarcely relieved the English from their oppressions. The Danish thanes continued as an unblended class of population in the English cities, even far out of the boundaries of the Danelagh. In London, the citizens adopted much of the barbarity of the Danes. Here also a great influx of the Danish population may be apprehended, for at the present day, the principal municipal court of London, the "husting," bears a Danish name.

The first "geld," or tribute, paid pursuant to the treaty which placed Canute upon the throne, amounted to seventy-two thousand pounds, or the price of full one million seven hundred and twenty-eight thousand acres of land, a tribute almost insupportable; ten thousand five hundred pounds fell upon the city of London. This levy was paid to the "host," and the share which fell to Canute was received by him, as a military commander (A.D. 1018). Throughout his reign the territorial taxes continued to be levied with great vigour. If the owner of the land could not pay his assessment by the end of the third day, the land itself was seized by the officers of the revenue, and sold forthwith for the benefit of the "hoard," or exchequer of the Danish king.

Canute, King of the "Danes, and of the Swedes, and of the Northmen," appears to have considered the opulent realm of England as the chief of the states over which he ruled, yet he did not neglect his other dominions. His continental possessions contained many turbulent subjects, and were bordered by the fierce and hostile Sclavonian tribes, the *Wendi*, who had pushed

streone, in  
Godwin, in  
Slavonians,  
their valour.  
ployed the su  
whilst they r  
equally a gain  
themselves slai

Canute kept  
Thurkill, Earl o  
appearance bet  
summoned by th  
coming in aid of t  
Haco," Canute's  
Earldom of Worces  
met with his dea  
coast of Norway.

The Swedes, trus  
country, repeatedly  
tribute, and defied  
thoroughly reduced.  
Godwin. And the ea  
chieftain.

the homage which was due only to the lawful heir of Ethelred. Malcolm, King of Scots, equally declared his hostility; but Canute assembled all his forces, and marched forthwith against the opponents of his authority. Malcolm was compelled to submit; the light-armed Celtic tribes, and the mixed Saxon host of the Lothians, could not resist the steady ranks of the English and of the Danes: he became the "man," or vassal of Canute. The "Reguli," or minor sovereigns—Malbethe, so well known to us as Macbeth, and Jemark, called by the Scandinavians the "Kings of Fife,"—followed the example of their superior. The infeudation of the kingdom of Cumbria, as the apanage of the heir-apparent of the Scottish monarchy, completed the pacification between the vassals and the sovereign; and the "Basileus," or Emperor of the Anglo-Saxons—for this was the title which Canute assumed—could boast that six nations—the English, the Scots, and the Britons, the Swedes, the Danes, and the Norwegians, were subjected to his power.

Canute, like all sovereigns who come in by force, or by the support of a party, has been represented very differently by his friends and by his enemies. In such a case each sees the same man through a different medium. Actions, which the one set of partisans represent as just and vigorous, seem harsh and cruel to the others; and the gift which is extolled by the receiver, as a proof of generosity, is stigmatized as the prodigal bounty of a rapacious tyrant, by those whose purses have been drained to supply the bounty thus bestowed.

On the whole, however, Canute governed in England with more justice than could have been anticipated from his origin and station. He was a foreign warrior,

accustomed to exercise despotic authority over the great body of his Scandinavian subjects, who had acquired the crown by force, and been compelled to propitiate his immediate followers out of the goods and lands of the conquered people. Time, however, diminished the necessity for such exactions; age softened Canute's temper; devotion purified his heart. He journeyed as a pilgrim to Rome; and on his return he issued a solemn address to the English people, professing repentance for the violence of his youth, and his hopes that he might be able to renew his life, and govern according to the dictates of mercy and justice (A.D. 1031).

When Canute was in the plenitude of his glory, he caused his throne to be placed on the sands of the seashore; and, addressing the ocean, he said, "Thou art my kingdom, and the dry land is also mine; rise not, obey my commands." Canute perhaps called the sea his realm, in allusion to the maritime dominion often ascribed to the crown of England. But the waves ascended with the swelling tide, and rolled on to his feet; and then Canute turned to his warriors and courtiers, and called upon them to confess how weak was the might of an earthly king, compared with that power by whom the elements are ruled. After this declaration, he took off his crown; and, depositing the symbol of royalty in the cathedral of Winchester, he never again adorned himself with the diadem.

Canute was very bountiful. On his way to Rome, we are told that he "scattered gold and silver with unparalleled liberality." The laws and statutes which bear his name are generally founded upon the laws of his predecessors; and he administered justice with an even hand. He was well spoken and cheerful; a liberal





conquered  
necessity of  
temper; de  
a pilgrim to  
solemn addre  
ance for the  
might be able  
the dictates of

When Canu  
raised his thr  
shore; and, ad  
my kingdom, at  
obey my comm  
his realm, in all  
ascribed to the  
cended with the  
and then Canute  
and called upon  
might of an earthly  
whom the element  
he took off his cre  
royalty in the cathe  
adorned himself





patron of the scalds and gleemen, being himself a reasonable proficient in the art of poesy. A ballad which he composed, continued long afterwards to be a favourite amongst the common people of England. It chanced that, when navigating the Nenne near the minster of Ely, the sweet and solemn tones of the choral psalmody fell on his ear; and Canute burst forth with his lay—

“ Merrily sung the monks, within Ely,  
When Canute, king, rowed thereby.  
Row, my knights; row near the land,  
And hear we these monkés’ song.”\*

All the other stanzas have been lost; and we may regret that we possess no further specimens of this composition, which entitles Canute to rank as one of the royal authors of England. Amongst the few ancient public works of which the origin is known, is the *King’s Delf*, a causeway connecting Peterborough and Ramsey, and raised amidst the marshes, by Canute’s command. Whilst the rich monasteries erected by him, St. Bennet’s in the Holme and St. Edmund’s Bury, have been utterly subverted, this memorial of his reign alone remains.

Canute died at Shaftesbury, and was buried at Winchester (Nov. 12, 1035). He had one son, Hardicanute, by the lady Emma, the sister of Richard, Duke of Normandy; and there were two other lads acknowledged by Canute as his children, but who, according to common report, were of very doubtful parentage. Their mother, or reputed mother, Alfgiva, daughter of Elf-

\* The following is the original fragment, as preserved in the *Historia Eliensis*. It will be observed, that the alteration of two words only converts the stanza into modern English. *Ben*, for *dinnen* or within, is still employed in the ancient Saxon dialect of modern Scotland:—

“ Merle sunge the muneces *dinnen* Ely,  
*Tha* Canut Ching, reu ther by.  
Roweth cnihtes, nêr the land,  
And here we thes muneces sang.”

helm, Ealdorman of Southampton, was the acknowledged concubine of Canute ; but it is said that she was barren, and that the babes, whom she called her own, were both supposititious. Sweyne, the eldest, was universally believed to be the son of a priest, whom the artful woman had presented to Canute as her own infant. Harold Harefoot, the youngest, was thought to be of still lower origin—the son of a cobbler—who had also been imposed upon the king.

These specimens of antiquated scandal may remind my readers of the opinion, so firmly maintained by the “news writers” in the reign of King William, that the poor little pretender had been smuggled into the lying-in chamber of Mary of Este, concealed in a huge royal warming-pan. But however much the stories may have been adorned by Anglo-Saxon gossip, the contemporary chronicles do certainly deny that Harold was the son of Canute and Alfgiva : “it was not sooth,” are the words of the text ; and upon this denial we must rest.

Canute intended to divide his dominions between Harold, Hardicanute, and Sweyne. Britain was to be ruled by the first, Denmark by the second, and Norway by the third, who had received his portion in his father's lifetime. The nomination of Harold, as King of the Anglo-Saxon realms, was much against the inclination of Earl Godwin ; and the English wished to choose either one of the sons of Ethelred, or Hardicanute the son of Emma, who was at least connected with the old line. Earl Leofric of Mercia, and the thanes north of the Thames, and all the Danes, espoused the cause of Harold : the citizens of London cast their powerful influence into the scale ; and in the great council or witenagemot held at Oxford, Harold was recognised as

King of Mercia and Northumbria. Earl Godwin and the nobles of Wessex resisted as long as they could—probably rather by assumption of power than by any clear constitutional right of interfering with the concerns of the other kingdoms; but they were in the minority. Yet they prevailed so far, that Earl Godwin was allowed to maintain possession of Wessex for the prince whose cause he espoused; and this kingdom was afterwards assigned to Hardicanute; whilst Mercia and Northumbria, as before mentioned, acknowledged the sovereignty of his real or supposed brother.

Hardicanute lingered in Denmark: his mother Emma acted for a time as Regent of Wessex, governing on his behalf, and holding her court at Winchester. After a short delay, however, Harold Harefoot and his party grew bolder, and he was proclaimed as “full king” over all England. But this election was not sanctioned by legislative authority. Ethelnoth, Archbishop of Canterbury, also refused to bestow the regal benediction. He placed the crown and the sceptre on the altar, and said to Harold—“I will neither give them to thee, nor prevent thee from taking the ensigns of royalty; but I will not bless thee, nor shall any prelate hallow thee on the throne.” Harold tried threats, prayers, bribes—all in vain: and being unable to obtain the sanction of the church, he lived as one who had abjured Christianity.

Edward and Alfred, the children of Ethelred, were safe beyond the sea; but as soon as the news of Canute's death was known in Normandy, they, by the assistance of their friends, fitted out a fleet and sailed to England. Edward approached the port of Southampton, where he found the inhabitants in arms, not to aid him in his enterprise, but prepared for the most strenuous resist-

Edward, who was generally hostile to the son of the tyrant, was ready to draw down upon himself the wrath of the brutal Harold. Edward, however, was not so rash, and abandoning the inhospitable land, he retired to his place of refuge in Norway.

Soon after the above letter was addressed, Harold sent a messenger to Alfred and Edward, urging them to return to England for the purpose of restoring the kingdom from the tyrant. Harold, however, was not so generous; and with a few trusty followers, who were stationed in Flanders, he proceeded to the coast. He was favourably received by Earl Godwin, who then conducted him to Guildford. Alfred, however, was not so easily deceived. Alfred was seized by the tyrant's soldiers, blinded, and carried to Ely, where death soon closed his eyes. (Godwin was very generally accused of



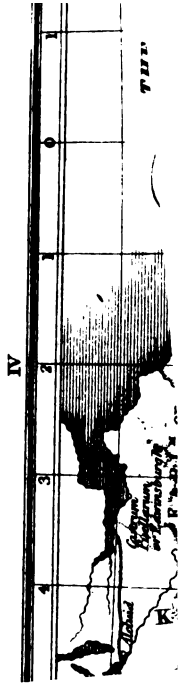
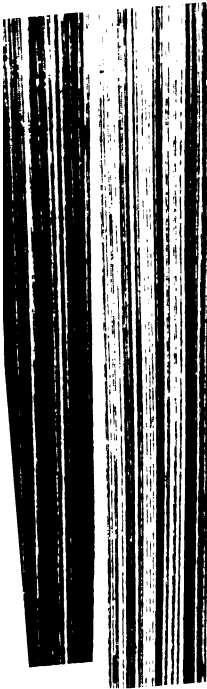
Heavy Danegelds were imposed: one is noticed in particular, amounting to thirty-two thousand one hundred and forty-seven pounds, being, according to the scale which I have before used, the price of seven hundred and seventy-one thousand and fifty-six acres of arable land. The taxes were collected by military execution. Hardicanute employed his "huscarles," or domestic troops, for the purpose of enforcing the levies. At Worcester the citizens rose against the collectors, and slew these odious functionaries. Hardicanute assembled all his earls, and commanded them to march with all their forces against the rebels; and the greater part of the city was burnt. So heavily did the burthen of taxation fall upon all ranks of the community, that the clergy were compelled to sell even their chalices to discharge their assessment. Corn rose to an enormous price, probably in consequence of the scarcity of money.

Hardicanute affected to feel great sorrow for the death of his brother Alfred. The corpse of Harold was torn up from the grave and cast into the Thames; and Earl Godwin, upon the accession of the new king, purchased his friendship, or appeased his enmity, by the gift of a vessel splendidly adorned, and manned with eighty thanes, all armed and apparelled with extraordinary magnificence. Such was the array of the crew. Eachthane was adorned with two golden armlets, severally of the weight of one pound, a triple hauberk, and a gilded helm. A sword with a golden hilt hung by the warrior's side. Over his shoulders was slung a Danish battle-axe, damasked with silver. The shield was bound and embossed with gilded metal; and in his right hand he wielded a gilded "ategar," the Moorish assagay. The chief men and principal thanes of all England swore that

Godwin had not incurred any guilt by his participation in the death of Alfred. It seems to be admitted that he had concurred in the misdeed ; but the commands of his sovereign were probably thought sufficient to absolve him of all legal as well as of all moral responsibility.

The death of Hardicanute is singularly characteristic both of the man and of the age (A.D. 1042). Goda, the daughter of Osgod Clopa or Clapa, an English thane of great wealth, was given in marriage to "Towid the Proud," a powerful Dane, the king's banner-bearer or marshal ; and Hardicanute graced the banquet with his presence at Lambeth, as it is said, but more probably at Clapham or *Clapa-ham*, the *hame* or *home* of Clapa. The potations were prolonged deep into the night. In the midst of the revel, Hardicanute dropped speechless upon the ground, and a few days afterwards he expired.





### Chapter XIV.

*Edward the Confessor—State of Parties—Influence of Godwin and his family—Earldoms held by them—Edward's Norman favourites—Sivard and Leofric, Earls of Northumbria and Mercia, oppose Godwin—Disturbances occasioned by Eustace, Count of Boulogne—Commutations in the country—Godwin takes the field against the King's party—He and his family are outlawed—Visit of William of Normandy—Godwin returns, and is restored to power—Death of Godwin—Questions concerning the Succession—Edward the "Outlaw," son of Ironside, called to England by the Confessor, and acknowledged as Heir to the Crown—His untimely Death—Edward appoints William of Normandy as his successor—Death of Edward.*

EDWARD THE ATHELING, the only surviving son of Ethelred, had been invited to England by Hardicanute, from whom he received great kindness. Hardicanute had no children, and the easy and quiet disposition of his half-brother averted all suspicion or anxiety. As soon as Edward was informed of Hardicanute's death, he was seized with great and almost unaccountable dismay; and he immediately despatched messengers to Earl Godwin (A.D. 1042-1043), requesting his council and aid. Neither was afforded readily. This powerful nobleman, who had so lately been accused of the foul murder of the noble Alfred, was at first little inclined to protect his suppliant brother; and we can best understand the character, the station, and the ambitious views of Godwin, when we are told that Edward endeavoured to throw himself at the feet of the earl. What did the Atheling ask from God-

days in peace and  
Godwin replied  
not," he exclaimed  
son of Ethelred, th  
you prefer an ing  
prince, by remindi  
had attained matur  
of adversity, and th  
Atheling had himse  
better enable him to  
confided to his care.

Godwin, continuin  
art, proceeded to exp  
difficulties in the way  
remove. But with  
rosity or disinterest  
own reward. King E  
win and his sons were  
Edward, by marrying  
Godwin, was to becom  
earl, in this discourse,  
upon the best feelings c

regret for the kingdom which he had abandoned. But Godwin represented the assumption of the royal dignity as a duty; and Edward, yielding to his arguments, assented to the conditions which were enjoined.

Within a few days after the body of Hardicanute had been consigned to the earth, the prelates and great men of the Anglo-Saxon realms assembled at London, and accepted Edward as their king. William, Duke of Normandy, aided Edward by his influence; and it was intimated to the English, that if they refused to recognise the son of Emma, they would experience the weight of the Norman power. Yet the act of recognition was mainly owing to the exertions of the Earl of Wessex, and to the consequence which he possessed in the assembly. Many of the members of the legislature yielded a blind assent to his influence—many were “persuaded by gifts,” or, as we should say, were bribed—many yielded to Godwin’s art and eloquence: he was a quick and fluent speaker, witty and clever, and wonderfully well calculated to please the giddy multitude. The more thinking and considerate voted for Edward, because they felt that he had the right: lastly, some opposed his accession, and voted against the prevailing party; and these, as the old chronicler tells us, were “carefully marked,” and not long afterwards driven out of England.

I relate these particulars, because they are important in many points of view. It is interesting to observe how influential, even at this early period, the gift of popular eloquence had become in England, and we shall find that it has continued to possess this value during every portion of our history. And the detail of the motives which actuated the majority of the assembly,

shows how little the prerogative possessed by the English witenagemot, of directing the succession of their monarchy, was attended with any real liberty of suffrage. For, as we have seen, one man was bought, another was intimidated, a third talked over, and a fourth sent out of the country as a troublesome fellow, because he would not vote against his inclination or his feelings.

There was no doubt, however, but that Edward was the true and lawful sovereign; and he was endeared by the amiability of his temper. So mild and humble was he, that no affront, no injury, could disturb his calm and placid mind. Just and merciful in his judgments, the promise to "observe the laws of good King Edward" was inserted in the coronation-oath of all his successors, until the revolution, when Parliament abrogated the ancient form. To Edward, also, the English owed the abolition of the Danegeld, which, as we have seen, had been levied with great rigour; and the whole tenor of



itself, inasmuch as he might allege that his conduct proceeded from affection and gratitude, but which was scarcely to be reconciled with his duties as a sovereign. Amongst all the matters which aggrieve the nobles and great men of any country, there is none which gives such general cause of offence as favour shown to overweening foreigners, who, forming a little knot or cabal about the person of the sovereign, are considered as the possessors of his confidence, to the detriment of those who claim this trust by reason of their station or their services; and such precisely was the position of our Anglo-Saxon king. Edward, according to his covenant with Godwin, had wedded the fair Editha; and her brothers—Harold, Sweyne, Wulnoth, Tostig, Garth, and Leofwine, were all respectively advanced to honours and dignities. In the old English expression, they were “the king’s darlings;” they had the complete sway over Edward; and, so far as they could make use of their sovereign’s authority, they ruled all England. They were bold and able men. Harold, in particular, was distinguished by his stature, his beauty, his engaging manners, his wit, and his eloquence; and he held the great earldoms of East Anglia, Essex, Cambridge, Huntingdon, and Middlesex. Sweyne was Earl of Oxford, Gloucester, Hereford, Somerset, and Berks; and Godwin himself, as Earl of Wessex and Kent, was in possession of all the remainder of the south of England. If you look upon the map,\* you will see how much strength they derived from the compactness and position of the dominions which they possessed; and gratitude, as well as policy, might induce the king to favour those who had become his kindred, and who had placed him on the throne.

\* No. IV.

these strange  
*Godwin-sons* ;  
wards the kin  
quietness and  
one who deriv  
aries, that the  
which they dir

Edward was  
the Norman ret  
in the person of  
subject of a quar  
wealthy Earl of  
whose earldom ex  
were opposed to  
Leofric, appears t  
not against the E  
tain from a debat  
when it was propos  
Sweyne of Denmar  
mans. Thus the  
prepared. On the  
party ; while the oth





Great Seal of Edward the Confessor.  
(From the Original in the British Museum.)

into England. The Norman hand-writing was thought handsomer, by Edward, than the Anglo-Saxon; and he established the mode of testifying his assent to official documents by adding an impression of his great seal, which was appended to the parchment, in addition to the mark of the cross, according to the Anglo-Saxon custom which I have before noticed.

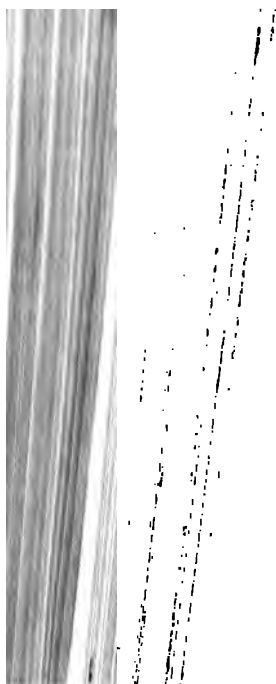
Hitherto the Anglo-Saxon kings never used a seal for the purpose of authenticating their charters. But the custom had been long established in France. And from the Frankish monarchs Edward borrowed the practice, though the seal itself, exhibiting his effigy, surrounded by the legend "*Sigillum Eadwardi Anglorum Basilei*," \* seems rather to have been copied from the patterns afforded by the Greek emperors.

It may appear that this innovation was no great grievance; but, upon examining the matter, it will be found connected with more important consequences. The adoption of these forms gave the king an additional reason for retaining about his person the "clerks" whom he had brought from France, and by whom all his writing business was performed. They were his domestic chaplains, and the keepers of his conscience; and, in addition to these influential functions, they were his law advisers, and also his secretaries of state; and as such they seem to have formed a bench in the witenagemot. The chief of these was his arch-chaplain or chancellor; and through them, judging from the practice both of the French and English courts, it was the custom to prefer all petitions and requests to the king. One

\* The crown is evidently an imperial crown. The bird surmounting the wand is a dove. On the reverse he is represented with the sceptre and the mound, or the globe surmounted by a cross.

suitor was desirous of obtaining a grant of land—another, mayhap, required a “writ” to enable him to recover amends for an injury; since no person could sue in the king’s court without a special permission—a third wished to ask for leave to quarter himself and his hounds and his horses on one of the king’s manors—and, in such cases, we cannot doubt but that Robert, the Norman monk of Jamieges, or Giso the Fleming, or Ernaldus the Frenchman, would have many means of serving their own party and disappointing their adversaries; and many an honest Englishman was turned away, with a hard word and a heavy heart, by these Norman courtiers. The chaplains, or clerks of the chancery, were particularly obnoxious: many of them obtained the best pieces of preferment in the king’s gift. The bishoprics were filled by prelates who might be good stout soldiers or clever lawyers, but who were therefore eminently disqualified for the stations in the







1043-1050) ; and one band of pirates, under Lothen and Irling, landed in Kent and Essex, which countries they ravaged. Earl Sweyne occasioned much scandal and disturbance. He carried off the lady abbess of Leominster ; and slew his kinsman, Beorn, for which last mentioned offence he was outlawed, but afterwards pardoned. Edward let the reins of government drop out of his hands ; allowing matters to take their own course, he now appeared almost as a simpleton ; and the defence and protection of the country depended entirely upon the great earls, amongst whom the territory of England was divided.

Whilst matters were in this state, an event occurred, which put the whole nation in confusion. Goda, the daughter of Ethelred, Edward's sister, had been twice married (A.D. 1051). Her first husband was Gauthier, Count of Mantes, by whom she had a son, called Ralph, much favoured by his uncle, the English king—Edward having bestowed upon him the earldom of Worcester. The second husband of Goda was also a foreign prince of great power—Eustace,\* the Count of Boulogne, who repaired to England, to the court of his brother-in-law.

When Eustace and his retainers were passing through the town of Dover, they behaved with great insolence ; and, without asking permission from any one, they determined to take free quarters in the town. Had they been in an enemy's country, they could not have acted more oppressively. The Kings of England themselves could not exercise such a right, except upon those domains which were in the nature of the private property of the crown. And so jealously did the Anglo-Saxon

\* Eustace II., surnamed "Aux grenons," from the length and importance of his whiskers.

baron.

The ret  
themselves  
forcing the  
them and t  
Frenchmen  
man, and th  
the foreigner  
his retainers  
rounding the  
forced their w  
side; then, s  
killed several c  
However, the I  
man in chain-a  
such an array t  
defended themse  
out of Dover, and  
Count Eustace  
story, laying all  
Edward, without  
the accuser, and c

defence; and he should have summoned them to appear before the witenagemot. Earl Godwin therefore refused to obey the order, at which, without doubt, he was rejoiced in his own heart. No adversary is so dangerous to a government as an ambitious agitator, who can unite himself to an honest cause, and thus gain a plausible pretence for the furtherance of his schemes: and Godwin, who could show right on his side, while he was treacherous in his heart, immediately attempted to avail himself of his advantage.

Earl Godwin gathered his forces far and wide, and so did his sons, Earl Sweyne and Earl Harold; and out they came in battle-array against the king, demanding that Count Eustace and the Frenchmen should be delivered up to their vengeance.

Edward, who was then at Gloucester, was greatly alarmed. Earl Godwin, his father-in-law, who had made him king, might have the inclination to deprive him of his kingdom; and Edward therefore instantly sent hasty and special messengers to Earl Leofric and Earl Siward, praying for their assistance in this hour of peril. These chieftains were at first but lukewarm in the king's cause: however, upon consideration, they assembled the "Fyrd" or militia of their earldoms, and marched to the aid of their sovereign, being joined also by Ralph, the Norman Earl of Worcestershire.

The best and noblest of England constituted the armies who were now opposed to each other. The northern earls were inveterate against Godwin; but, much as the people had been wrought upon by the nobles, the Englishmen on either side felt that, conquer who might, the victory would be for the advantage of the foes of England. It is possible also, that the warriors of both

... and  
sought by th  
these motive  
that they we  
men, perform  
thus compose  
berate and us  
manders.

The result v  
The king and  
given on either  
lature should l  
the dissensions

This witenag  
interval of time  
of Godwin (A.D.  
away—many of  
had been actively  
of the parts adjoin  
actual control ; an  
sure which they  
Sweyne should be  
An outlaw was not

laid to their charge. But they were afraid of their enemies, and demanded a reasonable security that they might come and stay and depart in safety. This request was refused, and the refusal casts some suspicion upon the king. Indeed, the tide had turned, and Godwin's adversaries were determined to push their advantage to the uttermost. Sentence of banishment was pronounced against Godwin and Harold, and within five days they were to depart out of England. There was no appeal; and so rapidly had their power declined, that they were entirely unable to resist. Godwin and his sons, so late the "king's darlings," were now exiles; and, "wonderful would it have been thought," in the words of the Saxon chronicle, "if any one had said before, that matters would have come to this pass." The old earl and his son Sweyne sailed to Flanders, to Earl Baldwin's country; and they had a ship full of treasure with them, to purchase a hearty and good welcome from the Flemings. Harold crossed to Ireland, and he was so far favoured, as to be allowed to remain in that country under the king's protection. This fact should be remarked, because it seems to show that he was not considered as being out of the king's dominions; or, in other words, that the opposite coast of Ireland was part of Edward's realm. Editha the Fair shared in the disgrace of her father and family. Her husband, the king, did not spare her: all her riches, gold, silver, and jewels, were taken from her by his command; she was stripped to the last groat, and then sent to the monastery of Wherwell in Hampshire, where, placed under the custody of the abbess, King Edward's sister, she was kept in cheerless captivity.

It may excite surprise, that the mild and humble-

mindful Edward should have been stimulated to such a succession of harsh, if not tyrannical acts, as those which I have narrated. But he was evidently of a timid and desponding character; and no one is more oppressive than a timid man, roused to vengeance by apprehension of danger. Towards the beginning of the reign, Godwin and his family considered that they had the king entirely in their grasp. That power they abused openly and grossly; and the bitterness of their tongues, without doubt, tended quite as much as any other cause to alienate the affections of Edward; affronts are more galling than injuries. Subsequent events also show that Edward dreaded their influence; and his marriage had not added to his comfort or security. Editha the Fair deserved this epithet. She was very beautiful; and the monkish chroniclers, according to their homely conceits, compare this daughter of Godwin to the rose springing from the thorn: but the lovely rose was a suspicious, and per-

daughter of Ironside. William had fully established himself in the duchy, after encountering many difficulties. He was a prince of extraordinary shrewdness and energy; and he now arrived from beyond the sea with a large and splendid train of Frenchmen, on a visit to his good cousin, Edward, King of England; consins they certainly were; for, as you will recollect, Edward's mother, Emma, was own sister to Robert, the father of William; and even if the kindred had been more remote, it would still have afforded a ground for attention and civility. Prosperity acts like a telescope, and often enables folks to bring distant relations much nearer than they would be without its aid. And we shall not be guilty of any great breach of charity if we suppose that William, young, ambitious, and enterprising, did not undertake this journey purely out of natural love and affection towards his old aunt and kinsman. Did he begin to form any plans for the invasion of England? Did he contemplate the possibility of wearing his kinsman's crown? In our modern days it is not at all an unfrequent thing for a man to sit down and write his own memoirs; in which, with great ingenuity and accuracy, he tells you everything concerning his actions and intentions, or at least everything which he wishes you to believe. In the eleventh century, however, these *asides* were not so common. William the Conqueror neither wrote his autobiography, nor hinted to any good and serviceable friend that he had no objection to have his opinions reported for the amusement and instruction of the world; and his "correspondence" is not extant, therefore I cannot exactly tell you what he thought. However, I can tell you what he saw, and then you may judge for yourself as to the sentiments

were in the res  
towards the We  
and Norman sold  
their own nation  
inconsiderable nu  
who, having settl  
call the freedom o  
their own, and p  
English burgesses  
tacks of an enemy  
were either quite c  
banks, or, perhaps,  
Englishmen themse  
inferior to the conti  
soldiers, they labou  
than any which can  
of armour. Stout, v  
when sober, was ful  
might be brought fr  
Loire. But the old F  
debauchery, and the  
The monkish chronic  
that we learnt of.



their possessions, but certainly not according to equity, so that they and their adherents had a double cause of hostility, disaffection, and the sense of the injury which they had sustained.

Edward was advancing in years, childless, and without hope of children. Upon his death, the royal line of Cerdic would be represented solely by Edward the "Outlaw," the only surviving son of Edmund Ironside, then a fugitive in a distant realm, far away in Hungary. Hardly did it seem probable that this prince, so estranged from England, could possibly assert his right to the succession; and, therefore, as soon as Edward should be stretched on the bier, the vacant throne might be ascended by any one who, whether by force or favour, could obtain the concurrence of any powerful partisans, or the sanction of the legislature.

Such then was the state of affairs when William, Duke of Normandy, afterwards the Conqueror, repaired to England. We have no positive evidence concerning what was said or done; and I am not prepared to relate the conversations between King Edward and his cousin, as if I had listened behind the tapestry. But the matters narrated by chroniclers I can repeat: and from their testimony we do know, that William was honourably received. He conducted himself with so much address as to acquire the confidence and good-will of Edward, who, by the expulsion of Godwin and his family, had obtained a temporary respite from uneasiness and disquietude. The country seemed to be cleared of these turbulent and dangerous chieftains. The whole of Harold's earldom had been granted to Algar, the son of Leofric. Devon, Somerset, Dorset, and West Wales, all parts of the earldom of Godwin, were transferred to

Odda, and the rest of Godwin's territories remained in the king's hands.

This calm did not last long—Godwin, as you will recollect, was in Flanders, with a ship full of treasure, and gathering together a fleet, he attacked the southern coast, and laid the country under contribution (A.D. 1052). King Edward was not unprepared; he and his witan apprehended that such an attack was meditated, and they had taken counsel how they might best avert the danger. They had, therefore, sent a fleet with orders to blockade the Flemish ports, and prevent the escape of Godwin. This naval force was placed under the command of Godwin's personal enemies: Earl Ralph, the Frenchman, and Earl Odda, who possessed the best portion of Godwin's dominions. But the Earl was on the alert; the weather favoured him; he outwitted his adversaries, and the king's affairs were so

When the "earls" arrived in the port of London they transmitted their demands to the king. In appearance, their requests were sufficiently reasonable and just, since they confined their petitions to the restoration of their former territories and dignities. If Godwin and his family had not been liable to suspicion, such a proceeding would have indicated great moderation. But Edward considered it as fraught with danger; for he gave a peremptory denial, and his refusal excited so bitter a feeling against him amongst the troops of Godwin, that the old earl had great difficulty in restraining them, though at the same time he steadily pursued his own purpose, and succeeded in gaining over the burghesses of London and Southwark to his party. When all Godwin's men were assembled, he put himself in motion; and whilst his vessels sailed up the river, his land army assembled on the "Strand," then, what its name implies, an open shore, without the walls of London, and extending along the northern bank of the river Thames.

The king's forces were considerable. But, as before, they were extremely averse to civil war. They were loth to fight with their own kinsmen; Englishmen only were engaged on either side. If Edward had been worsted in battle, a revolution was to be apprehended, and the crown might have been transferred to the house of Godwin. And, under these circumstances, King Edward, however unwillingly, was compelled to yield to the wishes of his subjects, and to agree to a compromise. Offers were made by the king, sufficient to appease the resentment, and satisfy the ambition of Godwin and Harold. Edward submitted to their preponderance, and the treaty was concluded, like all important transactions,

by means of the witenagemot. Godwin appeared before the "earls, and the best men of the land," who were assembled, and declared that he and his sons were innocent of the crimes which had been laid to their charge.

The great council not only agreed that Godwin and his sons were innocent, but decreed the restoration of their earldoms; and such was the influence of the Earl of Wessex, that the witan adopted all the views of his party. All the French were declared outlaws, because it was said that they had given bad advice to the king, and brought unrighteous judgments into the land; a very few only, whose ignoble names have been preserved—Robert the Deacon, Richard the son of Scrub, Humphrey Cock's-foot, and the Groom of the stirrup,—were excepted from this proscription: obscure, mean men, whom Godwin could not fear. Robert, the monk of Jumieges, who had been promoted to the Archbishop-

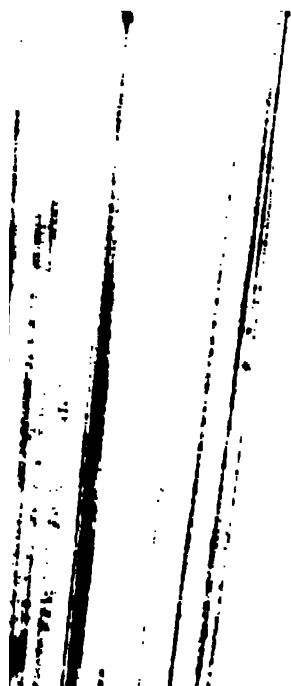
last," said Godwin, "if I committed the crime;" and this imprecation was followed by his death, he being choked by the bread which he had attempted to swallow. I do not vouch for these particulars. Tradition has been busy with his memory. The shoals called the "Godwin Sands," are popularly considered as his estates, which being overflowed by the sea, became and are the terror of the mariner. The exact circumstances of Godwin's death are doubtful; and the more authentic chroniclers, omitting the other details, only state that he was struck speechless, and that he died miserably within three days.

Harold, as the eldest son of Godwin, succeeded to his father's territories, and to his authority (A.D. 1053-1055). He vacated the earldom of East Anglia, which was bestowed upon Algar, son of Leofric, who had held the honour during Harold's outlawry. This appears to have been a device, enabling him to quiet his opponents until he should gain more power; and his influence rapidly increased. Upon the death of Siward, the doughty Earl of Northumbria, the king appointed Tostig, Harold's brother, as his successor; but with little justice, and contrary to the wishes of the people, and the right of Siward's heir. Harold gained much by the expulsion of Algar, who was outlawed by the "witenagemot," upon the accusation of treason, but unjustly, and without any real cause. Algar, trusting in the power of his father Leofric, who was still able to counterbalance the influence of Harold, was not to be easily disheartened. The stout exile imitated the example of Godwin and Harold under similar circumstances, and appealed to the sword. Retiring to the dominions of Griffith, King of Wales, who had espoused Alghitha, his sister, and was

peace was estab-  
tence of outlav  
restored to his  
afterwards, Leof  
Mercia devolved  
the displeasure  
outlawed and ba  
bold as before ;  
allies, the Welsh,  
he rocovered pos  
defying Edward a  
offered to King  
rising against Tost  
sure, and expelled  
Morkar, a son of  
assent from Edwar

A kingdom in  
was evidently on th  
nor unanimity su  
against faction ; ar  
every bystander m  
the mercy of any







descendants of Edmund Ironside (A.D. 1057). King Edward had hitherto regarded his family with coldness, if not with aversion. But the wish to ensure tranquillity to his kingdom prevailed; and he recalled "Edward the Outlaw" from his abode in Hungary, with the intention of proclaiming him as heir to the crown.

Edmund Ironside had been much beloved, and greatly did England rejoice when Edward, no longer the Outlaw, but the Atheling, arrived here, accompanied by his wife Agatha, the emperor's kinswoman, and his three fair children, Edgar, Christina, and Margaret. But the people's gladness was speedily turned to sorrow. Very shortly after the Atheling arrived in London, he sickened and died. He was buried in St. Paul's Cathedral; and sad and rueful were the forebodings of the English, when they saw him borne to his grave. Harold gained exceedingly by this event. Did the Atheling die a natural death?—the lamentations of the chroniclers seem to imply more than meets the ear.

Edward's design having thus been frustrated, he determined that William of Normandy should succeed him to the throne of England (A.D. 1058-1065), and he executed, or, perhaps, re-executed a will to that effect, bequeathing the crown to his good cousin. This choice, disastrous as it afterwards appeared to be from its consequences, was not devoid of foresight and prudence. Edward, without doubt, viewed the nomination of the Norman as the surest mode of averting from his subjects the evils of foreign servitude or domestic war. The Danish kings, the pirates of the north, were yearning to regain the realm which their great Canute had ruled. At the very outset of Edward's reign, Magnus, the successor of Hardicanute, had claimed the English crown.

his elevation  
greatest evil  
England, wo  
equal; the o  
indeed insupe  
ancient royal  
self upon an A  
William him  
the advice and  
Leofric, and Gc  
was made before  
son and nephew  
had also been se  
acters of pledges  
carried into effect  
opposition should  
three earls thus v  
made this assertion  
and honour, we ma  
instance, appointed  
grew older, his affec  
and he recalled the





less in doubt concerning the minor incidents. Whether accident or design conducted him to the court of the Duke of Normandy, is uncertain; and the preceding account of the two wills in favour of William, is an hypothesis collected only from the general bearing of the narrations. William, well aware of Harold's influence, used every endeavour to ensure his future aid; and in return, William agreed to bestow upon Harold the hand of his daughter, the fair Adela. The English earl promised that he would give up to the Norman duke the castle of Dover, a fortress belonging to him as part of the inheritance of Godwin, and considered as the key of England. He confirmed the engagement by oath, and became the "man" or vassal of William, whom he acknowledged as his future sovereign.

In the meanwhile, Harold was rising in repute. He invaded Wales, and desolated the country (A.D. 1063-1064). Griffith opposed him valiantly, but he was slain by the treachery of his own countrymen. His gory head was sent to the Confessor as a trophy of victory; his dominions were bestowed upon his brothers Blethyn and Rhiwallon, who were accessary to the murder. And these princes became the vassals, not only of King Edward, but of Earl Harold, to whom they performed fealty and homage. As Earl of Wessex, Harold could have no claim to this obedience, and if enforced by him, the act can only be construed as an attempt to establish a sovereign power.

Edward was now rapidly declining in health; he had rebuilt the ancient abbey of Westminster, founded, as you will recollect, by Sebert, but which had been ruined during the Danish wars. And, holding his court, according to the ancient custom, at Christmas, he caused

the new fabric to be consecrated, in the presence of the nobles assembled during that solemn festival.

Edward felt that the hand of death was upon him. A little while before he expired (Jan. 5, 1066), Harold and his kinsmen forced their way into the chamber of the monarch, and exhorted him to name a successor, by whom the realm might be ruled in peace and security. "Ye know full well, my lords," said Edward, "that I have bequeathed my kingdom to the Duke of Normandy, and are there not those here whose oaths have been given to secure his succession?" Harold stepped nearer, and interrupting the king, he asked of Edward, upon whom the crown should be bestowed. "Harold! take it, if such be thy wish; but the gift will be thy ruin. Against the duke and his baronage, no power of thine can avail thee." Harold replied, that he did not fear the Norman, or any other enemy. The dying king, wearied with importunity, turned himself upon his couch, and faintly intimated that the English nation might name as king, Harold, or whom they liked; and shortly afterwards he breathed his last.

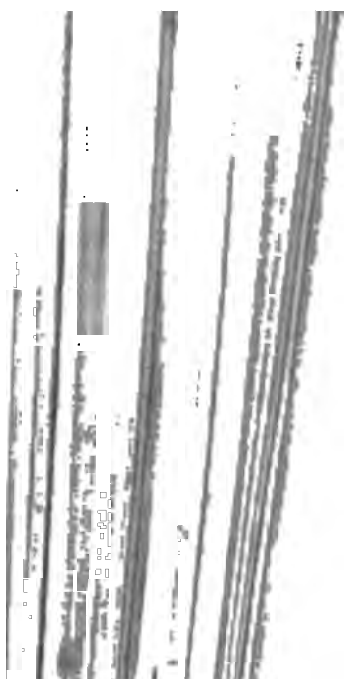
Harold afterwards founded his title upon Edward's last will; many of our historians favour his claim, and the different statements are difficult to be reconciled; yet taken altogether, the circumstances are exactly such as we meet with in private life. The childless owner of a large estate, at first leaves his property to his cousin on the mother's side, from whose connections he has received much kindness. He advances in age, and alters his intentions in favour of a nephew on his father's side—an amiable young man, living abroad,—and from whom he had been estranged in consequence of a family quarrel of long standing. The young heir comes to the



monarch  
whom th  
"Ye kno  
have bequ  
and are t  
given to s  
and interr  
whom the  
it, if such  
Against the  
can avail t  
the Norman  
wearied with  
and faintly  
name as king  
afterwards he  
Harold afte  
last will ; mar  
the different  
yet taken alto  
as we meet wit  
a large estate







testator's house—is received with great affection—and is suddenly cut off by illness. The testator then returns to his will in favour of his cousin, who resides abroad. His acute and active brother-in-law has taken the management of his affairs, is well-informed of this will; and, when the testator is on his death-bed, he contrives to tease and persuade the dying man to alter the will again in his favour. This is exactly the state of the case; and though considerable doubts have been raised relating to the contradictory bequests of the Confessor, there can be no difficulty in admitting that the conflicting pretensions of William and Harold were grounded upon the acts emanating from a wavering and feeble mind. If such disputes take place between private individuals, they are decided by a court of justice; but if they concern a kingdom, they can only be settled by the sword.

Our kings, in the castle of Windsor, live on the brink of the grave, which opens to receive them. The throne of Edward was equally by the side of his sepulchre, for he dwelt in the palace of Westminster, and on the festival of the Epiphany, the day after his decease, his obsequies were solemnized in the adjoining abbey, then connected with the royal abode by walls and towers. Beneath the lofty windows of the southern transept of the abbey, you may see the deep and blackened arches, fragments of the edifice raised by Edward, supporting the chaste and florid tracery of a more recent age. Within stands the shrine, once rich in gems and gold, raised to the memory of the Confessor by the fond devotion of his successors, despoiled indeed of all its ornaments, neglected and crumbling to ruin, but still surmounted by the massy iron-bound oaken coffin which contains the ashes of the last legitimate Anglo-Saxon king.

Edgar  
 Harold  
 Edward  
 Alfred  
 M.  
 Edgar  
 Harold  
 Edward  
 Alfred  
 M.  
 Edgar  
 Harold  
 Edward  
 Alfred  
 M.

Thus the idea  
 these claims  
 of Normandy,  
 each of which  
 upon the real  
 Edgar Atheling  
 ought to have  
 any weight he  
 of Inuente—as  
 Cedric; and he  
 Edward, as the  
 first

1066), Harold prevailed upon, or compelled the prelates and nobles assembled at Westminster, to accept him as king. Some of our historians say, that he obtained the diadem by force. This is not to be understood as implying actual violence; but simply, that the greater part of those who recognised him, acted against their wishes and will. And if our authorities are correct, Stigand, Archbishop of Canterbury, but who had been suspended by the pope, was the only prelate who acknowledged his authority.

Some portions of the Anglo-Saxon dominions never seem to have submitted to Harold. In others, a sullen obedience was extorted from the people, merely because they had not power enough to raise any other king to the throne. Certainly the realm was not Harold's by any legal title. The son of Godwin could have no inherent right whatever to the inheritance of Edward; nor had the Anglo-Saxon crown ever been worn by an elective monarch. The constitutional rights of the nation extended, at farthest, to the selection of a king from the royal family; and if any kind of sanction was given by the witan to the intrusion of Harold, the act was as invalid as that by which they had renounced the children of Ethelred, and acknowledged the Danish line.

Harold is stated to have shewn both prudence and courage in the government of the kingdom; and he has been praised for his just and due administration of justice. At the same time he is, by other writers, reprobated as a tyrant; and he is particularly blamed for his oppressive enforcement of the forest-laws. Towards his own partisans, Harold may have been ostentatiously just, while, at the same time, he exercised of the royal

difficult  
to the cre  
not the h  
dubious ;  
consent t  
principles  
change of  
fast vergin  
reign, the  
the Humbe  
existed ; an  
of England,  
son of Godw  
of the suprer  
divided the t  
as good a cl  
easily incited  
crown had b  
the belief th  
children of W  
cession had bec  
kindred " exch  
"

his presence, and related the events which had happened : Edward's death and Harold's assumption of the crown. The bow dropped out of the hand of the Norman, and he was unnerved by anxiety and surprise. William fastened and loosened his mantle, spake not, and looked so fierce and fell, that no one ventured to address him. Entering a skiff, he crossed the Seine, still silent ; stalked into the great hall of his palace, threw himself into a seat, wrapped his head in his mantle, and bent his body downwards, apparently overwhelmed. "Sirs," said William de Breteuil the seneschal, to the inquiring crowd, "ye will soon know the cause of our lord's anxiety;" and then, approaching his master, he roused the duke by telling him that everybody in the streets of Rouen would soon hear of the death of Edward, and of his claims to the succession. William instantly recovered from his reverie ; and upon the advice of a Norman baron, Fitz-Osbern the Bold, it was determined that he should forthwith require Harold, the sworn liegeman of William, to surrender the inheritance, and to perform the engagements which he had contracted with the Norman sovereign.

Harold answered, that the kingdom was not his to bestow : implying, no doubt, that he could not make the transfer without the consent of the witenagemot. He also alleged distinctly, that he could not marry Adela without the advice of the nobility of his realm. If this assertion be taken in its strict sense, we must suppose that, as the queen had some, though a very undefined, share in the royal authority, she could not be raised to that rank without the assent of the legislature. But perhaps we must receive the expressions according to a more qualified construction ; and suppose that Harold

reply we  
to be con  
defied th

Harold  
knew the  
period, we  
dent gove  
there had  
The heads  
Fitz-Osber  
and strong  
and execut  
great parlia  
determined  
the English

In this me  
diversity of c  
vassals to cre  
them to such  
their aid, to fi  
to engage in  
bates arose. 1  
wishes of 41



Fitz-Osbern might make any promise on his own part, to which he was stimulated by his loyalty. But the other barons had not empowered him to assent on their behalf to bind them to similar exertions; and whilst he was speaking, such an outcry of disapprobation arose, that it seemed as if the very roof of the hall would be rent asunder. William, who could not restore order, withdrew into another apartment: and, calling the barons to him one by one, he argued and reasoned with each of these sturdy vassals separately, and apart from the others. He exhausted all the arts of persuasion; their present courtesy, he engaged, should not be turned into a precedent; the troops now granted as a favour should never be demanded as a right by himself or his successors; and the fertile fields of England should be the recompense of their fidelity. Upon this prospect of remuneration, the barons assented; and, that they might not retract, the ready clerk wrote down in his roll, the number of knights and vassals which each prelate and baron would furnish to this expedition.

William did not confine himself to his own subjects. All the adventurers and adventurous spirits of the neighbouring states were invited to join his standard. Armorica, now called Brittany, had become a fief of Normandy; and though the duke could not compel the baronage of that country to serve in his army, still they willingly yielded to his influence. Alan Fergant, and Bryan, the two sons of Endo, Count of Brittany, came with a numerous train of Breton knights, all ready for the conflict — perhaps eager to avenge the wrongs of Arthur upon the Saxons, who had usurped the land of their ancestors. Others poured in from Poitou and Maine; from Flanders and Anjou; and to all, such

promises were made as should best incite them to the enterprise—lands, liveries, money, according to their rank and degree; and the port of St. Pierre sur Dive was appointed as the place where all the forces should assemble.

William had discovered four most valid reasons for the prosecution of his offensive warfare against a neighbouring people: the bequest made by his cousin; the perjury of Harold; the expulsion of the Normans, at the instigation, as he alleged, of Godwin; and lastly, the massacre of the Danes by Ethelred on St. Brice's day. The alleged perjury of Harold enabled William to obtain the sanction of the papal see. Alexander, the Roman pontiff, allowed, nay, even urged him to punish the crime, provided England, when conquered, should be held as the fief of St. Peter. In this proceeding, his holiness took upon himself to act judicially, and in solemn consistory; not, however, without opposition,—but the measure was carried: and Hildebrand, Arch-deacon of the Church of Rome, afterwards the celebrated Pope Gregory VII., greatly assisted, by the support which he gave to the decree.

As a visible token of protection, the pope transmitted to William the consecrated banner, the Gonfanon of St. Peter, and a precious ring, in which a relic of the chief of the apostles was enclosed. Nothing could be more futile than the pretext that the war was undertaken for the purpose of redressing the wrongs sustained by Archbishop Robert and his companions, or of avenging the slaughter committed by Ethelred; and the sanction given by the pope was in itself an attack upon the temporal authority. Yet the colour of right, which William endeavoured to obtain, shows a degree of deference to

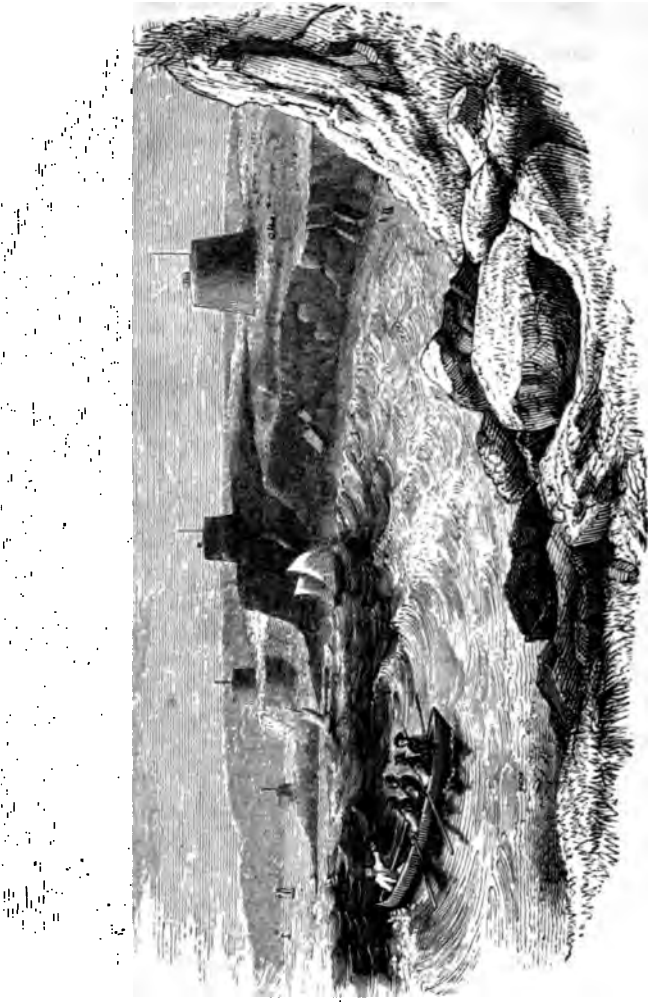
public opinion ; he was anxious to prove that his attempt was not prompted by mere ambition or avarice ; and that, at all events, supposing Edward's bequest might be disputed, he was justified in his attempt by good conscience and honour.

There was little regular communication between England and the continent ; but it was impossible that the extensive preparations of William should remain unknown to Harold ; and he immediately began to provide for defence. He mustered his forces at Sandwich, and then he took his station at the Isle of Wight, during the whole of the summer and part of the autumn. Such a navy as he could assemble guarded the coast, while his land forces were encamped on the shore. During this period, he transmitted a spy to procure further particulars of the forces which the Normans had raised. The agent was discovered, and carried to William, by whom he was received without either harshness or affectation of concealment, and dismissed without harm. The spy was informed by the duke, that Harold need not take any trouble or incur any expense for the purpose of ascertaining the Norman strength ; for he would see it, aye, and feel it too, within the year.

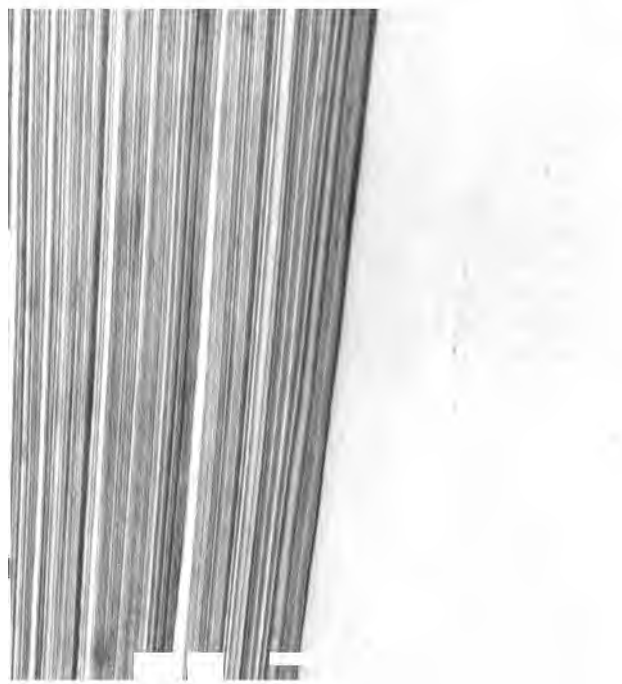
The computation of the navy assembled by William has varied exceedingly. Master Wace, to whose poetical chronicle we are so largely indebted, relates, that he often heard his father say, that the number of vessels amounted to six hundred and ninety-six ; but that he found it stated in writing, that upwards of three thousand had been assembled. This latter computation, probably, included all the smaller barks ; but, be that as it may, the fleet was the largest which had ever been seen. William's own vessel, which had been given to

say was the  
arrow, and the  
hostile land.

The gathering  
had been delay-  
chances. The s  
were still unav-  
brought forth to  
Michael, the pat-  
arise, and the w  
across the waves  
and other circum-  
off his forces from  
tected: and when  
shore of England  
(Sept. 29, 1666),  
offered to the inva-  
as the masts rose  
peasantry who dw  
gregated on the  
the hostile vessels,  
ing near for the co



Pevensey Bay.



glistening with shields and spears ; in others, stood the war-horses, neighing and pawing at the prospect of release from their irksome captivity. Now followed the archers, closely shorn, arrayed in a light and unincumbering garb ; each held his long bow, strung for the fight, in his hand, and by his side hung the quiver, filled with those cloth-yard shafts, which, in process of time, became the favourite and national weapon of the yeomanry of England.

The archers leap out of the boats, disperse themselves on the shore, and station themselves in the out-posts, so as to protect, if necessary, the heavy armed troops who are about to disembark. The knights are now seen, carefully and heavily treading along the planks, each covered with his haubergeon of mail, his helmet laced, the shield well strengthened with radiating bars of iron, depending from his neck, his sword borne by his attendant esquire. The gleaming steel-clad multitude cover the shingly beach in apparent disorder, but they rapidly separate, and, in a few moments, each warrior is mounted upon his steed. Banners, pennons, and pennoncelles are raised ; the troops form into squadrons, and advance upon the land, which they already claim as their possession.

Boat after boat poured out the soldiery of the various nations and races assembled under the banner of William ; and lastly came the pioneers, with their sharp axes, well trained and taught, and prepared to labour in the defence of the army which they had accompanied.

The quick eye of the leader selected the spots for stockades and entrenchments. The timbers and other materials, were floated down the river, and dragged to the position where they were to be used.

the north,  
nor rested  
rushing in  
festal triumph  
brother.

The history  
parts of E  
Harold. I  
was ever for  
we are assured  
The Anglo-Saxons  
was no legend  
was there among  
the three kingdoms  
Northumbria,  
necessarily by  
others of the  
aldermen, and  
sanctioned the  
not have been  
the very short  
Edward and the



Wales, seemed to create a powerful connexion against the Norman power. But it may be doubted whether any real strength was gained by this alliance. Harold gave his hand to the dowager queen of Wales, to her whose husband he had murdered; but his affections were placed upon Editha the Fair—"the Swan's Neck"—as she was called from her beauty; and the existence of such an attachment negatives the idea of any real union between Harold and the princess whom he had espoused. Nor could the political influence of his brothers-in-law greatly avail him. Edwin might persuade the thanes of Mercia, he could not compel them, to submit to Harold. The population of Northumbria, ever impatient of government, wholly refused obedience, and were ready to find any pretence for attacking the southron king, whom they had never acknowledged as their sovereign; and Harold's nearest kinsman was preparing to assail his authority.

From their earliest youth, nay, even from their babyhood, a bitter spirit of rivalry had subsisted between Tostig and his brother Harold. When Tostig, who had taken refuge in Flanders after his expulsion from Northumbria, was informed of his brother's accession, he instantly determined to supplant him, or to drive him from the throne. Tostig began by machinating with William; and the Duke of Normandy supplied this recreant with a force for attempting the invasion of England. Supported by the foreigner, Tostig ravaged the Isle of Wight and the neighbourhood of Sandwich; and it was for the purpose of repelling this invasion, that the forces of Harold, to which I have before alluded, were assembled on the southern coast and shores. Tostig did not await the conflict, but pressing some of the

The first was Norwegian and named in honor of the sailor of the American ship. The second, having the vessel's name, was named after a Norwegian. The first was named in honor of the largest of the islands of the coast of the Orkneys, where they cruised and then cruised in Cleveland, where plans to return to the unavailing

Harfager unfurled his banner, named "landeyda," or "the desolation of the country" (Aug. 1066). Tostig's friends and retainers rallied with ardour, and joined Harfager in great numbers, adding strength, and imparting confidence to his army. Edwin and Morcar issued forth from York with all the forces which they could assemble: but after a desperate conflict (Sept. 20, 1066), they were put to flight, and in such confusion, that more men were drowned in the river than slain in the field. A great portion of the thanes of the adjoining wapentakes adhered to Harfager; those who did not, fled; so that he had the entire command of the country; and the citizens of York, either believing opposition to be hopeless, or not choosing to resist, opened their gates to the Norwegian conqueror. Harfager proceeded to establish his authority according to the forms of the constitution. He held a court without the walls of the city, and all the inhabitants being summoned thereto, they performed homage to the victor. And, furthermore, Harfager proclaimed "full peace" to all who would proceed to the south with him, and enable him to win the land. This proceeding discloses the plan of Harfager and Tostig. They did not seek a military possession of Northumbria, but they intended to acquire the lawful dominion of Anglo-Saxon Britain.

As soon as Harold heard the news of the landing of Harfager and Tostig, he rallied all his forces, and marched with the utmost expedition to the seat of war, where he arrived four or five days after the surrender of York (Sept. 25, 1066). Harold endeavoured to detach Tostig from his ally, by offering him the earldom of Northumbria. Tostig replied, by asking the thane who bore the message,—Would Harold make any grant

---

of land to his coadjutor, Harfager? "Seven feet of land for a grave." "Ride back again," exclaimed Tostig, displaying a spirit worthy of a better cause, "and desire King Harold to gird himself for the fight; for never shall it be told in Norway that Earl Tostig abandoned Harfager, the son of Sigurd, and went over to his foes."

Harfager had encamped at Stamford Bridge, long afterwards known as "Pons Belli," or "the Bridge of Battle." The firm array of the Norwegians, who, ranging target close to target, had formed what they called a *skield-borg*, or "fortress of shields," bristled with spears, could not be broken by the English, and the latter retreated. The Norwegians, thinking that their adversaries were about to fly, opened their ranks and began a pursuit. The English instantly wheeled round, and attacked the enemy (Oct. 7. 1066). Harfager struck around him as if he were frantic; neither shield nor hauberk could resist his blow; but an arrow brought him to the ground, and a pause ensued. Tostig seized the banner and assumed the command. Harold sent a herald to offer peace to him, and to all the Norwegians who were yet alive. But they answered with one voice that they would not take quarter. The war-cry rose again, and in this conflict Tostig fell. The "*landeyda*," the fatal banner, was now seized by a warrior named "*Eysteynn Orri*," and a third onslaught began. The Northmen fought with the utmost desperation: whether their bodies were protected by their shields or not, they did not heed:—all they sought, was to give and receive a mortal wound. In this conflict many of the English fell, but they ultimately maintained their ground. Late in the evening the battle was terminated by the death of almost every Norwegian, and the heaps of unburied bones,

blanched by the sun and rain, long continued to remind the passer-by of the fatal day.

It was on the morrow of the battle, that the Thane of Sussex came to Harold, and apprised him of the arrival of his most dreaded enemy. Harold immediately marched south, and halted at London, where he prepared to attack the invader. The best part of his troops had fallen; few others joined him, either as volunteers, or by virtue of their tenures or of their allegiance. Edwin and Morcar stood aloof; they did not support their brother-in-law; Alghitha, his wife, also quitted him, and abandoned him to his fate. Harold's army too plainly testified the danger of his cause; his ranks were imperfectly filled by hired soldiers, who served him merely for their pay; and whatever force he had, was raised from the south of the Humber; not a man came from the north. Githa, his mother, sad and weeping for the loss of her son Tostig, earnestly dissuaded Harold from attempting to give battle to William; his other friends and relations joined her in such entreaties, none so earnestly as Gurth, Earl of Suffolk, Harold's brother, praised for his singular merit and virtue. Gurth pointed out to him, that his troops were wearied and exhausted, the Normans fresh and confident; and furthermore, the Earl of Suffolk represented to Harold that the violation of his oath would lie heavy upon his soul in the field of battle. If Harold would send his troops against William, Gurth solicited that he, who was unfettered by any such obligation, might take the command; for it appears that the oath was considered as binding merely upon the individual Harold, and that it did not restrain him from sanctioning hostility in others. But Harold was influenced by that obstinate, self-willed determination,

... ended with  
"holy rood" b  
before he set c  
orisons at the  
the darkness an  
the crucifix bow  
fancied, but ther  
was one of those  
by the lowering c  
of Waltham deter  
vent, Osgod and  
factor on his marc  
to the best of his p  
of Sussex. At Se  
halted. His camp  
and on the spot wh  
afterwards placed, h  
William had been  
liminary to further l  
vessels to be drawn o  
He told his men, tha  
to die—flight was in  
Roman castle



Supposed Saxon Keep, Pevensey.

Page 330.

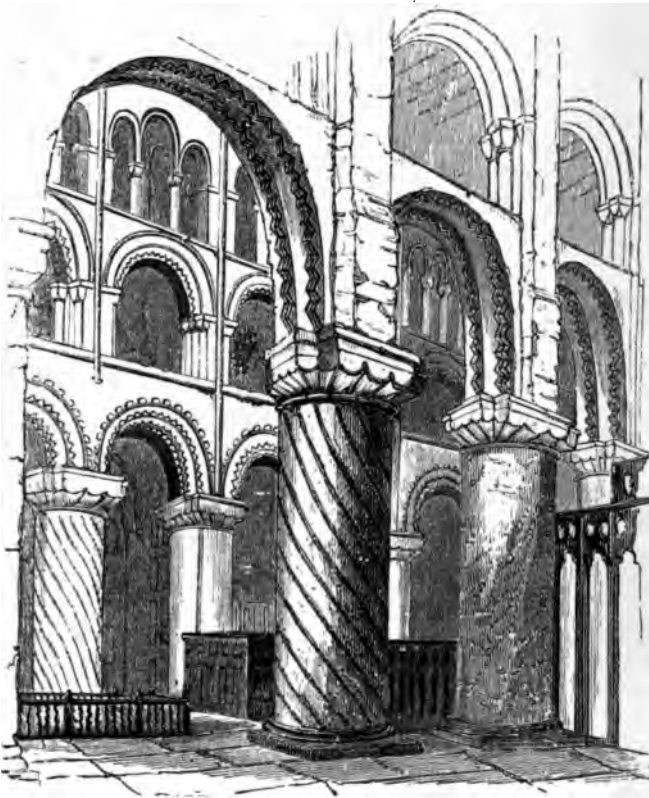


Walls, Pevensey.

Page 320.







Waltham Abbey.



for the purpose of resisting Harold. William replied, that his best defence was in the valour of his army and the goodness of his cause ; and throughout the whole of this expedition, the cool good sense by which he increased the moral courage of his followers is singularly remarkable.

In compliance with the opinions of the age, William had an astrologer in his train. An oriental monarch, at the present time, never engages in battle without a previous horoscope, and this superstition was universally adopted in Europe during the middle ages. But William's "clerk" was not merely a star-gazer. He had graduated in all the occult sciences—he was a necromancer ; or, as the word was often spelt, in order to accommodate it to the supposed etymology, a *nigromancer*—a "sortilegus"—and a soothsayer. These accomplishments in the sixteenth century, would have assuredly brought the "clerk" to the stake. But in the eleventh, although they were highly illegal according to the strict letter of the ecclesiastical law, yet they were studied as eagerly as any other branch of metaphysics, of which they were supposed to form a part. The *sorcerer*, or "sortilegus," by casting "*sortes*," or lots, had ascertained that the duke would succeed, and that Harold would surrender without a battle, upon which assurance the Normans entirely relied. After the landing, William inquired for his conjurer. A pilot came forward, and told him that the unlucky wight had been drowned in the passage. William then immediately pointed out the folly of trusting to the predictions of one who was utterly unable to tell what would happen unto himself. When William first set foot on shore, he had shown the same spirit. He stumbled, and fell

One  
modern French  
ran to a cottage  
the thatch, tell  
the seizin of t  
These little anec  
Normans, and th  
vaded.

Some fruitless  
negociation. Ha  
camp, who was  
enterprise. The  
some historians re  
a legal decision, t  
according to the la  
law of England ; o  
please Harold, that  
single combat, the  
victor. The propos  
authorities, to have  
promise, namely, tha  
and William the r  
All or any of th

diversity of such narratives, nor is it at all necessary to attempt to reconcile them. The general truth is easily understood. It was evident to each of the chieftains, that they had respectively ventured their whole fortunes on the cast of the die ; and before engaging in a conflict which must prove fatal to one of them, they made an attempt to avoid the danger.

Fear prevailed in both camps. The English, in addition to the apprehensions which even the most stout-hearted feel on the eve of a morrow whose close they may never see, dreaded the papal excommunication, the curse encountered in support of the unlawful authority of a usurper. When they were informed that battle had been decided upon, they stormed and swore ; and now the cowardice of conscience spurred them on to riot and revelry. The whole night was passed in debauch. "*Wæs-heal*" and "*drink-heal*" resounded from the tents ; the wine cups passed gaily round and round by the smoky blaze of the red watch-fires, while the ballad of ribald mirth was loudly sung by the carousers.

In the Norman leaguer, far otherwise had the dread of the approaching morn affected the hearts of William's soldiery. No voice was heard excepting the solemn response of the litany and the chaunt of the psalm. The penitents confessed their sins—the masses were said—and the sense of the imminent peril of the morrow was tranquillized by penance and prayer. Each of the nations, as we are told by one of our most trustworthy English historians, acted according to their "national custom ;" and severe is the censure which the English thus receive.

The English were strongly fortified in their position by lines of trenches and palisadoes ; and within these

and they were drawn u  
foot of this banner st  
Leofwin and Gurth, an  
thanes, all anxiously ga  
they expected the adva

Before the Normans  
early in the morning of  
1066), William had as  
and exhorted them to m  
the invaders drew nigh,  
composed of the volunte  
and from the Amiennois,  
Fitz-Osbern and Roger l  
exclaimed Harold, "and  
forces will his be four  
shook his head, and exp  
Norman cavalry, as opp  
England; but their dis  
appearance of the com  
Viscount of Thouars, a  
Harold's heart sank at th  
passionate exclamations c

As the Normans were marshalled in three divisions, so they began the battle by simultaneous attacks upon three points of the English forces. Immediately before the duke rode Taillefer, the minstrel, singing, with a loud and clear voice, the lay of Charlemagne and Roland, and the emprises of the Paladins who had fallen in the dolorous pass of Roncevaux. Taillefer, as his guerdon, had craved permission to strike the first blow, for he was a valiant warrior, emulating the deeds which he sung: his appellation, *Taille-fer*, is probably to be considered not as his real name, but as an epithet derived from his strength and prowess; and he fully justified his demand, by transfixing the first Englishman whom he attacked, and by felling the second to the ground. The battle now became general, and raged with the greatest fury. The Normans advanced beyond the English lines, but they were driven back, and forced into a trench, where horses and riders fell upon each other in fearful confusion. More Normans were slain here than in any other part of the field. The alarm spread; the light troops left in charge of the baggage and the stores thought that all was lost, and were about to take flight, but the fierce Odo, Bishop of Bayeux, the duke's half-brother, and who was better fitted for the shield than for the mitre, succeeded in reassuring them, and then, returning to the field, and rushing into that part where the battle was hottest, he fought as the stoutest of the warriors engaged in the conflict, directing their movements, and inciting them to slaughter.

From nine in the morning till three in the afternoon, the successes on either side were nearly balanced. The charges of the Norman cavalry gave them great advantage, but the English phalanx repelled their enemies;

...arrows were  
came down upon  
the iron shower f  
lish ranks were  
yet they still stoo  
ployed a stratagem  
entrenchments. A  
the English to pur  
mans suddenly wh  
battle was urged.  
bands of foemen, ca  
the English yelde  
English thane, arme  
amongst the French  
de Montgomery.  
name of the Normar  
is lost in oblivion.  
praised, as having si  
delayed the ruin of t

At one period of t  
routed. The cry wa  
and they began to fly  
off his helm







dropped from his steed in agony, and was borne to the foot of the standard. The English began to give way, or rather, to retreat to the standard as their rallying point. The Normans encircled them, and fought desperately to reach this goal. Robert Fitz-Ernest had almost seized the banner, but he was killed in the attempt. William led his troops on, with the intention, it is said, of measuring his sword with Harold. He did encounter an English horseman, from whom he received such a stroke upon his helmet that he was nearly brought to the ground. The Normans flew to the aid of their sovereign, and the bold Englishman was pierced by their lances. About the same time, the tide of battle took a momentary turn. The Kentish men and East Saxons rallied, and repelled the Norman barons; but Harold was not amongst them; and William led on his troops with desperate intrepidity. In the thick crowd of the assailants and the assailed, the hoofs of the horses were plunged deep into the gore of the dead and the dying. Gurth was at the foot of the standard, without hope, but without fear—he fell by the falchion of William. The English banner was cast down, and the Gonfanon planted in its place, announced that William of Normandy was the conqueror.

It was now late in the evening. The English troops were entirely broken, yet no Englishman would surrender. The conflict continued in many parts of the bloody field, long after dark. The fugitives spread themselves over the adjoining country, then covered with wood and forest. Wherever the English could make a stand, they resisted; and the Normans saw that the great preponderance enabled them to obtain the victory.

a natural feeling  
arose in his soul  
which the prayer  
the repose of the  
dict, was at once  
token of his p  
endowed : and all  
was annexed to t  
freed from the aut  
bury, and invested  
high altar was erec  
standard had wav  
archives of the mor  
who had fought wit  
the lands of broad  
pomp and solemn  
The perpetual pray  
Battle is rent. The  
trodden in the dus  
ground—and a dan  
the foundations of t  
for the gaze of the i







Porch of Malmesbury Abbey.

Page 328.



Arms of Malmesbury.

Page 328.





was buried in the abbey of the Holy Cross. Those who lived nearer the time, however, relate in explicit terms that William refused the rites of sepulture to his excommunicated enemy. *Guilielmus Pictavensis*, the chaplain of the conqueror, a most trustworthy and competent witness, informs us that a body of which the features were undistinguishable, but supposed, from certain tokens, to be that of Harold, was found between the corpses of his brothers, Gurth and Leofwine, and that William caused this corpse to be interred in the sands of the sea-shore. "Let him guard the coast," said William, "which he so madly occupied;" and though Githa had offered to purchase the body by its weight in gold, yet William was not to be tempted by the gift of the sorrowing mother, or touched by her tears.

In the abbey of Waltham, they knew nothing of Githa. According to the annals of the convent, the two brethren who had accompanied Harold, hovered as nearly as possible to the scene of war, watching the event of the battle: and afterwards, when the strife was quiet in death, they humbly approached William, and solicited his permission to seek the corpse.

The conqueror refused a purse, containing ten marks of gold, which they offered as the tribute of their gratitude; and permitted them to proceed to the field, and to bear away not only the remains of Harold, but of all who, when living, had chosen the abbey of Waltham as their place of sepulture.

Amongst the loathsome heaps of the unburied, they sought for Harold, but sought in vain,—Harold could not possibly be discovered—no trace of Harold was to be found; and as the last hope of identifying his remains, they suggested that possibly his beloved Editha might

miserable task in  
posing, and mutilated  
and conveyed to V  
there entombed at  
honour and solemn  
the requiem.

Years afterwards  
heavily upon the F  
had become a tale  
by the light of the  
the sullen tolling of  
anchorite, who inha  
John at Chester, wh  
This recluse, deeply s  
lived in strict peniten  
visited the aged hermi  
with him; and, on h  
attendant monks that  
transmitted to us, he b  
the field to a castle, pr  
tinned concealed until  
sanctuary where he exp  
The

they declared, showed, when disinterred, the impress of the wounds which he had received. But may it not still be doubted whether Osgood and Ailric, who followed their benefactor to the fatal field, did not aid his escape? They may have discovered him at the last gasp; restored him to animation by their care; and the artifice of declaring to William, that they had not been able to recover the object of their search, would readily suggest itself as the means of rescuing Harold from the power of the conqueror. The demand of Editha's testimony would confirm their assertion, and enable them to gain time to arrange for Harold's security; and whilst the litter, which bore the corpse, was slowly advancing to the abbey of Waltham, the living Harold, under the tender care of Editha, might be safely proceeding to the distant fane, his haven of refuge.

If we compare the different narratives concerning the inhumation of Harold, we shall find the most remarkable discrepancies. It is evident that the circumstances were not accurately known; and since those ancient writers who were best informed cannot be reconciled to each other, the escape of Harold, if admitted, would solve the difficulty. I am not prepared to maintain that the authenticity of this story cannot be impugned; but it may be remarked that the tale, though romantic, is not incredible, and that the circumstances may be easily reconciled to probability. There were no walls to be scaled, no fosse to be crossed, no warder to be eluded; and the examples of those who have survived after encountering much greater perils, are so very numerous and familiar, that the incidents which I have narrated would hardly give rise to a doubt, if they referred to any other personage than a king.

power. That po  
humbled Englishm  
looked around, and  
man was near, whis  
they saw before the  
that Harold still bre  
well that the spot  
cast down, was the  
England.







